

The
TRAGEDY
and
GLORY
of
BELIEVERS

brother Hanola

2010
MONTREAL, CANADA

This book and its distribution are given to the hands of the Spirit of God. No funds or donations shall ever be solicited from anyone. What shall alone be acceptable to Our Father and to us are freewill cheerful offerings out of a pure heart. Such shall be acceptable and an official receipt for income tax purposes shall be issued in Canada or in the United States, if desired.

Copyright © 2010 – author.

This book is published by:

MONTREAL REMNANT MINISTRIES

379 Wickham, St–Lambert, QC, Canada J4R 2B5

Fax: 450-466-4151 or 450-465-3529 or 450-465-1601

E-mail: info@cm-mrm.ca Website: www.cm-mrm.ca

Correspondence may be mailed (emailed) to the above address including requests for our literature, questions, testimonies or comments. We will gladly minister to the hearts which truly desire to seek the Lord, to obey Him, trust Him, love Him and be prepared for His Coming as Our Saviour, Lord and God.

NOTE: Scripture references are from the Authorized King James Version of the Bible. No other version is used, but some archaic expressions have been modified into today's language.

Printed by:

Transcontinental Gagné

750, av. Deveault, Louiseville, (Québec), J5V 3C2, Canada

ISBN 978-0-9782276–1–6

INSCRIPTION

*I am inscribing this work to Thee,
OUR ALMIGHTY GOD JEHOVAH,
Our FATHER, Our LORD JESUS CHRIST
and the MOST HOLY SPIRIT.*

*May this brief work bring fruit,
which would be pleasant and acceptable to Thee
and which would also fulfill Thine purposes.*

* * *

*I personally have
a very deep and true love and thankfulness
to Thee, My Heavenly FATHER,
My LORD JESUS CHRIST and
the MOST HOLY SPIRIT
for Thine unfathomable Love, Grace, Goodness,
Power, Wisdom, Patience, Mercy,
Compassion and Faithfulness
in all that Thou hast been doing in me,
in all that Thou hast called me to do and
in all what Thou hast called me to be.*

* * *

*May Thine work in all of us who love Thee
from a pure heart
be completed until the Day of
JESUS CHRIST OUR EXCELLENT LORD
and according to His WORD. (Phil. 1:6)*

A M E N

DEAR FRIEND,

This is a gift from the Lord Jesus Christ, the Lord of Heaven and Earth, the Head of His Body, the true Church, and of every Christian in all things.

If you have friends, brothers or sisters who believe in the Lord Jesus, are born-again by His Spirit or are seeking Him with their heart, share this gift with them. The Lord knows in whose hands His gift belongs, and He shall guide you.

We thank you on His behalf for your attention to His gift according to His desire and pleasure. In the Blessed Name of our Saviour, Lord and coming King of all kings, we remain

Yours in Christ Jesus

Brother H a n o l a
with all the brethren in this Body of Christ in Montreal

IMPORTANT NOTE

This is not an evangelistic Ministry. We do not supply Bibles, theology books, concordances, evangelistic tracts, dictionaries or any other literature, which the Lord has not granted to us! We do not offer correspondence courses, degrees, financial support or sponsorship of any kind. Letters requesting such materials or services may not be answered. We are presently only few families and all our expenses are covered from our own monthly salaries, pensions and from gifts of few loving brethren! Yet, we currently minister the Word of God and His Testimonies in 70 countries of the world. Praise the Lord!

Our calling is primarily toward those in the Church, who desire to grow in Spirit, know and love the Lord and be prepared for His Coming. Therefore, all our writings, which we distribute, are granted to us by the Lord for that chief purpose. Our literature is thus limited in quantity and it is not for every "interested reader". We pray that it would be distributed according to the Will of God thus fulfilling His purposes. Amen.

CONTENTS

	<u>PAGE</u>
<i>FOREWORD</i>	i
CHAPTER 1 – INTRODUCTION	1
CHAPTER 2 – REDEMPTION OF MAN	8
DEFINITIONS	8
REALITY OF OUR SPIRIT	12
WATER BAPTISM	17
CHAPTER 3 – SALVATION OF MAN	22
DEFINITIONS	22
REALITY OF OUR SOUL	24
ABILITY OF OUR SOUL	29
SOULISH BELIEVERS	44
SPIRITUAL BELIEVERS	63
CHAPTER 4 – TWO CROSSES	94
CHAPTER 5 – PONDERING DEEP SPIRITUAL ISSUES	112
CHAPTER 6 – “WHERE ART THOU?”	183
CHAPTER 7 – THE TRAGEDY AND GLORY OF BELIEVERS	192
CHAPTER 8 – AS THE DAYS OF NOAH WERE	219
THE END AND THE NEW BEGINNING	249
PRAYER OF AN OPEN HEART	265
<i>ADDENDUM</i>	269
<i>EPILOGUE (T. Austin-Sparks)</i>	274
LIST OF LITERATURE ^[x]	276

FOREWORD

It pleased the Lord of Heaven and Earth to call me to be His servant, to reveal Himself to me in a very gracious and loving way, to deposit in this vessel of clay His treasure and charge me with the ministry of His Judgments, of the Full Truth of His Word and of the ensuing necessary spiritual preparations and cleansing of His people especially those that truly desire to follow Him, (Mt. 16:24) know Him, love Him and, as His Bride, be prepared for His Coming as their Bridegroom. (Mt. 25:6)

This has become the most important ministry in His eyes for this time of the end of the world. No other ministry has for Him any greater importance, at this time, since it is to prepare His Bride to HIS satisfaction for the time is at hand. This is the only reason why this brief work was undertaken to bring before us the most important spiritual issues of believers that are to be diligently considered, seen, understood, believed and performed for Our Lord.

This work may be considered as a sequel to the book "Word to the Church of Jesus Christ^[8]", published in 2006 by Montreal Remnant Ministries (ISBN 0-978226-0-3). The quoted book presents the WORD of GOD as touching the present spiritual state of the Church and spiritual ministry to the Church in a general form.

The above quoted book was not written to please believers or give them an appealing, but false, picture about their spiritual reality. Rather, it was written to present ALSO THE BITTER PART OF THE FULL TRUTH OF THE WORD OF GOD WHICH IS NEVER PREACHED OR EXPLAINED. There was limited space in the book to deal with any particular issue in an extended way or to a more desirable depth.

This present work is devoted to THE MOST IMPORTANT ISSUE which has been causing the TRUE TRAGEDY in the Church of Jesus Christ from the very beginning until now. It is a singular issue that affects the life of every born-again

believer from his redemption on, determines his spiritual state, progress or regress and his destiny. In this respect, it deserves to be called THE MOST IMPORTANT ISSUE for all believers and thus for the Church as a whole.

This MOST IMPORTANT ISSUE touches our SPIRIT and SOUL as TWO DIFFERENT PARTS OF OUR BEING, THEIR DIFFERENT SALVATIONS, different life or death, their differences in thoughts, understanding, intelligence, intents, goals and power. It also touches different roles of spirit and soul in the life of believers and their influence in the final destiny of every individual believer.

Some basic facts concerned with this MOST IMPORTANT ISSUE of SPIRIT and SOUL are to some extent discussed and declared in our above quoted book, "Word to the Church of Jesus Christ^[8]". Also, our brochure "Truth about Salvation^[9]", published in 2003 by Montreal Remnant Ministries, gives a more detailed picture about the transformation of the whole personality of a believer and the way it is done by the Spirit in cooperation with the believer. This brochure also shows and briefly discusses the DIFFERENCE BETWEEN OUR REDEMPTION AND SALVATION. Hence, some parts in this present book will be a repetition of some of these basic facts, but from a different angle of approach and with some added definitions and details.

Seven times have I reviewed, refined every word of this book before the Living Christ so that He might burn out all dross (flesh) (Lev. 14:7; 16:19// 2Ki. 5:10,14// Ps. 12:6// Pr. 24:16// Lk. 17:4) that there should not be anything contrary to His Holiness and Righteousness and Truth. That it might be as pure and acceptable to Him as is possible under the circumstances and my spiritual state before Him. That it may serve His purposes alone for I do not seek my own will, goal or purpose in any part of this book, but His Will. (Jn. 5:30) This paragraph is a repetition from the above quoted book^[8], as the Lord was leading me through the very same process also for this book. Here, I desire to attach a few important notes concerning this review before Him.

The seven-fold review of this book does not include the basic editing, which is normally done with every book before it goes to print. This review is done before the Lord and for the purposes of refining the text before or after the normal editing has been done. It touches solely the spiritual side of the text and its meaning. In each revision, I had to come “closer” to the Lord, be with Him in my conscience and ask Him to review with me every word written herein and any particular aspect of the book to make it whole, truthful and thus acceptable to Him. This does not mean that this book is absolutely faultless in His eyes! But I asked Him to lead me to weed out parts, even whole paragraphs, which in themselves may have been correct, but in spirit they would have complicated matters rather than present a clearer picture; or to add any parts that were necessary to fill in the picture.

Then I had to ask the Lord to go through the book with me using a “fine comb” where my nature would have inserted “new and thus far unseen” spiritual facts just to “show off” my knowledge, but which were unimportant for the present purpose of the book. Natural human mind has a tendency to write “everything it knows”. Such a review is usually very painful and difficult since the primary purpose of why many authors write books, is to succeed with publishers, to produce “bestsellers”, get a reputation, glory and monetary gains. Clearly, none of this has been the Lord’s goal or mine.

In the first Chapter, I write that not everything I wrote was a direct revelation to me from the Lord, but that I had also received light from other true servants of the Lord (chiefly, Watchman Nee from China and Austin T. Sparks from England). The light they had received was made yet deeper and wider in its spiritual meaning by the Lord. This deeper spiritual meaning is what had to be recorded and revised under the careful supervision of His Spirit. Another revision had to be done to incorporate the true spiritual meaning of many of my personal experiences some of which were very painful indeed, but rich in hidden spiritual

meaning. Also, a fine comb of the Spirit was used to go through every word of the book to see that the reader would get the right interpretation of what is written and would not be confused in any way due to a wrong wording, double-meaning, word order or other features of the text. In order to achieve this, the brethren from our Body of Christ, who are sufficiently mature in spirit, have also proofread the book being "independent readers" uncovering any parts which I understood, but were not written in the way that others would also understand and see the same spiritual picture and its meaning. Sometimes the change of one word would change the spiritual meaning of a whole sentence, paragraph or section.

This kind of review is very exhaustive indeed for any human heart and spirit even more than for the human mind. Yet, it is absolutely necessary to ensure that the text of this book would not be solely a product of a religiously educated mind or human imagination and reasoning and that it would not contain only the intellectual knowledge that has been accumulated during the previous years of study. Despite this careful and exhaustive review of the text before the Lord Himself, I feel that the Lord purposely left in it the "features" and weaknesses of this vessel of clay.

This should give a sufficiently practical picture of the seven-fold review of this and also of my previous book^[8].

May it therefore please the Lord to use this written testimony and work of faith for His pleasure and purposes. Since many believers are called, but few are chosen (**Mt. 20:16**) and since believers are predestinated according to His foreknowledge and His Purpose, (**Rom. 8:28,29**) then HIS PURPOSE IS GOVERNING ALL OUR LIVES AND ALL OUR DESTINIES.

May the LORD enable all readers to open their heart, mind and will to Him, believe His whole Word and trust in Him. May He also enable them to believe and truly receive the very essence of this MOST IMPORTANT ISSUE declared and discussed in this work of faith. May this Light and Truth

from the Lord benefit and strengthen every believer to PRESS toward the prize of his/her high calling of God in Christ Jesus, (**Phil. 3:14**) which means, toward his/her perfection. (**Heb. 6:1**) The Word of God stands for ever and we have the freedom to use and trust HIS WORD or ignore IT. The LORD of Heaven and Earth will always honour His Word and He will grant to those believers that believe and honour and keep His Word, all that they would need both now and in their entire future. AMEN.

On behalf of the King of kings and Lord of lords:

brother H a n o l a

NOTE:

IT IS **VERY IMPORTANT** THAT READERS WOULD VERIFY THE **BIBLICAL REFERENCES** QUOTED IN THE TEXT, READ THEM CAREFULLY AND PONDER THEM IN THEIR HEART, AS THEY READ THE TEXT OF THIS BOOK. THIS WILL RICHLY MULTIPLY THE BENEFITS IN READING AND ACQUIRING THE LIGHT AND TRUTH FROM THE WORD DECLARED AND DISCUSSED IN THIS BRIEF WORK.

IT IS EQUALLY **IMPORTANT** THAT READERS CONTINUE TO READ AND PONDER EVEN THOUGH SOME PASSAGES MAY NOT BE FULLY UNDERSTOOD OR EVEN IF ONE'S FAITH AND UNDERSTANDING MAY CURRENTLY DIFFER. WE ARE GENERALLY UNABLE TO GRASP ALL THE TRUTHS THE LORD GIVES US RIGHT FROM THE START (**JOB 33:14**). THE LORD DESIRES THAT WE WOULD NOT THROW AWAY ANYTHING BEFORE WE EXTRACT FROM IT HIS NUGGETS OF GOLD.

CHAPTER 1

INTRODUCTION

Before I write anything in this book, the Lord Jesus Christ is constraining me to declare a simple, but essential truth from His Word saying:

“YOU have not chosen ME, but I have chosen YOU, and ordained you, that you should go and bring forth fruit, and that YOUR FRUIT SHOULD REMAIN;” (Jn. 15:16)

This Word applies to every believer, whom HE has chosen and ordained and whom no one else has chosen or ordained. The Lord also speaks about FRUIT, WHICH SHOULD REMAIN. This kind of fruit is not subjected to time, rotting, deterioration, destruction or disappearance; it is indestructible by men or by the forces of darkness and evil. Therefore, THIS fruit is the only clear proof whether we were chosen and ordained by the Lord or by men. (Mt. 7:16-20) Let us see and understand that this fruit is not a physical, mental or intellectual fruit, not buildings, not organizations, not institutions, not ministries, not teaching, not preaching, not studies, not things of the physical or mental or intellectual nature.

THIS fruit is a spiritual fruit which the Lord can taste, appreciate, cherish and love FOR EVER! Buildings, organizations, institutions, ministries, teaching, preaching, studies and all things physical, mental or intellectual may be temporary tools which could be useful in the hands of a minister whose flesh was crucified (Gal. 5:24) and who was chosen, ordained and given to the Church by the Lord as His gift and as a seed of His Kingdom. (Eph. 4:11,12) The physical, mental or intellectual “fruit” of our labours will NOT REMAIN, but will perish and be forgotten. (1Cor. 13:8b) The problem with the majority of believers is that they cannot discern or assess their own fruit, let alone the fruit of other brethren, therefore, they cannot “know anybody by their fruit”. And this, unfortunately, applies also to many in the leadership.

Hence, there may be quite a large number of ministers, who were not ordained and given by the Lord to His Church, rather, they were ordained by men and organizations. If such un-crucified ministers undertake to shepherd other believers with the Word of God and with supposed “messages from the Holy Spirit”, they are taking an enormous risk of being in their time “rooted up”. (Mt. 15:11-13)

Again, before I come to the facts and truths in Chapter 1, the Lord desires to destroy some basic, but profound, deceptions that have been holding the Church from Her calling and fulfilling the Will and Purpose of Our Father in Heaven. These deceptions shall be unmasked by His Truth which follows in this book.

Some of the basic deceptions involve normal and commonly performed Christian activities which may give to believers a “wrong message” about their true spiritual state before the Lord and about His judgment and acceptance of their spiritual state. Let us see some of the deceptions.

KNOWLEDGE OF THE BIBLE IS NOT SALVATION. TEACHING AND PREACHING OF THE BIBLE IS NOT SALVATION. ATTENDING CHURCH SERVICES IS NOT SALVATION. SINGING SACRED MUSIC AND GIVING OF TITHES AND OFFERINGS IS NOT SALVATION. SOCIAL WORK, HELPING THE POOR, WORKING “FOR THE LORD” IS NOT SALVATION! NOTHING THAT MAN CAN THINK OF, DO OR IMAGINE IN HIS MIND, IS SALVATION! WHY?

ANY HUMAN SOUL IS ABLE TO ACQUIRE THE KNOWLEDGE OF THE BIBLE AND PERFORM **ANY** OF THE DEEDS QUOTED IN THE FRAME ABOVE WITHOUT NECESSARILY BEING REDEEMED BY GOD’S SPIRIT! HENCE, ANY “RELIGIOUS UNSAVED SOUL” IS ABLE TO DO IT ALL.

AND NOT ONLY HUMAN SOULS, BUT SATAN HIMSELF AND HIS MINISTERS ARE TRANSFORMED INTO THE MINISTERS OF RIGHTEOUSNESS (2Cor. 11:14,15) AND HAVE BEEN DOING OR IMITATING ALL THAT IS IN THE FRAME ABOVE! ARE WE AWARE OF THIS FACT? NO! THAT IS WHY THE LORD IS PRESENTING IT TO US AND WE ARE REQUIRED TO SEE AND UNDERSTAND THIS FACT CLEARLY. SO THEN, WHAT IS SALVATION?

SALVATION IS THE COMPLETE **DEATH** OF THE **OLD**,
SINFUL, SOULISH, CARNAL, **NATURAL MAN**;
HIS OLD SPIRIT, OLD SOUL AND OLD BODY!

SALVATION IS THE **CREATION** OF A COMPLETELY
NEW, PERFECT, SINLESS, **SPIRITUAL MAN**;
HIS NEW SPIRIT, NEW SOUL AND NEW BODY!

THIS IS THE TRUE, COMPLETE AND FINAL SALVATION
OF MAN IN GOD'S HEART AND PURPOSE! (2Cor. 5:17)

THIS WILL BE THE MAIN THEME IN THIS BOOK and the Lord Himself will give us what we need to see, know, understand and do at this junction of our earthly lives. It will facilitate our preparation for His Coming as Bridegroom for His Bride. (Mt. 25:1-13) We may be His Bride by being born-again, but we may not be acceptable to Him as His Bride in our present character and state of our soul and spirit. And WE MAY NOT BE AWARE of what in us is repulsive to Him or what is pleasing to Him. We have but a short time to our Marriage (Jn. 17:21// Rev. 19:7-9) and we, who believe that we love the Lord and are waiting for His appearance, MUST understand the Word of Our Bridegroom to us and also its urgency at this time.

There are two important facts in Rev. 19:7-9, which the Lord desires us to see and understand. In verse 7, His Wife has made herself ready. We usually do not know how to make ourselves ready for Him! In verse 8, She was arrayed in fine linen, clean and white, for the fine linen is HER OWN RIGHTEOUSNESS! The Lord says that HIS RIGHTEOUSNESS was acquired by Her through Her own SPIRITUAL cross, death and resurrection! (Mt. 16:24,25) His Bride and Wife must have Her own righteousness and this is Her preparation for His Coming as Bridegroom!

Right at the beginning of this work, I desire to establish another important fact.

Most of what follows in the Chapters of this book is not my natural knowledge and wisdom! The most important spiritual truths and facts declared and discussed herein, I

have not received from men or through studies, but by a gracious and absolutely sovereign revelation from the Lord. You will be able to judge this fact in your own spirit and conscience, if you have an eye to see, an ear to hear and a heart to understand. And whatever light I had received from my studies, meditations, prayers or from other true servants of God (and I have), He enlarged and enriched in its spiritual depth, importance and significance which I had never seen and understood in my heart before.

I have also received many truths through my manifold living experiences in my 65 years of being a believer and in 40 years of walking with the Living Lord and ministering Him to believers in many countries of the world. His Truth declared in this book has also been wrought into the lives of those that the Lord had given to me personally to care for and *“travail until Christ is formed in them”*. (Gal. 4:19) These believers are now “new creatures” (2Cor. 5:17// Gal. 6:15) walking on the narrow way (Mt. 7:14) being transformed into Christ’s Image. (Rom. 8:29) They are living proofs of His Truth doing His Word. They are also my FRUIT THAT SHALL REMAIN and shall please the Lord for ever.

Therefore, His spiritual Truth and facts which follow are not to be taken as simply doctrines, results of studies or interesting new views on biblical matters. I was led to write what I SEE with the Lord, what I LIVE before Him and what He desires to give us as His Light and Judgment about the state of His believers and of His Church at this crucial time. This also shows His True Love, Grace, Mercy, Patience, Wisdom and His Righteous Judgments for His Church.

Whenever the Church departs from the Light of the Word of God or finds Herself in grave danger and may not even be aware of it, the Lord gives His Light anew, also His warnings, His helping hand, and that sovereignly, without waiting for prayers of believers thus affected and endangered. Most believers, including many ministers, may not even know that they could be in grave danger. They may not believe that the Lord has to give them a warning; that

He may be speaking to them today even on the pages of a book as this one, which book, to them, is coming from “no-where” and is written by “nobody”. (1Cor. 1:27-29) Yet, it is the Lord, Who chooses the vessels through whom He speaks to His Church and not men and there are multitudes of believers, and many leaders, who may still not believe this simple truth of the Scripture. These are the proud and unrighteous believers, who have an evil heart of unbelief. (Heb. 3:12). But if they do not believe His chosen men speaking to them, should the Lord again use a “dumb ass” to speak to them rebuking them in their iniquity and madness? (2Pet. 2:16) What do you believe?

But this book is written primarily for the believers who have a heart that believes, is sincere, honest and open to the Lord for His Truth and Light. I am responsible for publishing what the Lord has given to me and led me to do and what I live before the Living God by His Grace. And you are responsible for considering it sincerely and prayerfully in your heart, mind and conscience before the Living Son of God, Who is also my Living Witness (this is not a small thing to say!) I am definitely not your judge and you, readers, are definitely not my judges; you are not accountable to me, but to the Lord, Who is your Judge... and mine.

Furthermore, this book is NOT written because believers desire it or are looking forward to it or because they all will be pleased by it. On the contrary, many believers and many leaders may be not only surprised, but OFFENDED by the Truth of God as revealed to us all at this end time. They may not realize that the Truth, we desperately need before Our Lord comes, must first shock us or even offend us, as it is often bitter Truth. But then, after we have received it, it becomes sweet.

Hence, many believers may reject the Truth and Light from the Word of God that this book brings to them and may also accuse me of all kinds of things, but without giving me any specific reasons! This is a well known performance of the “flesh” and of the powers of darkness and evil and I have experienced it many times. Such believers always

judge unrighteously and accuse in generalities, but they never give even one specific fact or example on which to base their accusations and their unrighteous judgments. They do not have even one constructive thought or the willingness to go along with the Will and Desires of Our Lord as revealed to us all in His Holy Word and especially in its passages which are never preached and explained to believers.

May the Lord forgive such believers since they most certainly do not know what they are doing. Yet, even some of them may be converted from their old soulish, proud and unrighteous man to their new spiritual man and fulfill the Will and Desire of their Heavenly Father. I do pray to the Lord for extending His Grace toward all of them as I see them as victims of the powers of darkness and evil unable to see themselves and the deceptions in which they live and act.

I beseech every sincere heart and soul that may be dissatisfied with today's form of religion or Christianity and that may be seeking and thus far not finding satisfactory answers and help that it desires and needs to read this book prayerfully, to meditate on the Word of God presented therein and not to reject what you may not understand at this time. The Lord is able to grant you directly or indirectly what you are seeking for, if you open to Him your heart and soul.

* * *

Let us now come to THE MOST IMPORTANT ISSUE of our life by defining and clarifying the scope of **REDEMPTION** of man and the scope of **SALVATION** of man as **TWO SEPARATE ACTS OF GOD IN EACH BELIEVER.**

Let us also see and understand that Our Saviour and Lord is giving to us this Light without us asking for it! Why? He knows that *"His people are destroyed for lack of spiritual knowledge of His Person".* (**Hos. 4:6; 6:3**) His Person **IS** Truth. But His Light provides the knowledge of the spiritual truths which man cannot obtain through studies or research

of any kind. God's Light and Truth cannot come from man's soul, from his heart or from his intellect. It must be revealed to his spirit by God Himself. Then His Light must come from his spirit into his heart as faith and then his heart (as part of his soul) must be enabled to see it or hear it and understand it. (Mt. 13:15) This Light and spiritual knowledge of the Person of God revealed to man by God Himself saves man from his self-destruction and produces the fruit that shall always REMAIN!

May the Lord open our eyes giving us spiritual eyesight; and may our heart be opened and enabled to see and understand what our natural soul can never see and understand. (1Cor. 2:14) Most believers sincerely believe that their soul is spiritual and not natural because they were "born-again", but they do not see and understand the difference between their spirit and soul. This is one such tragic deception which the Lord will expose in this book so that we may see it, understand it and be prepared for His Coming and Judgment. Our life and destiny always depend on what we see, believe and what we do with our beliefs.

Let us see and understand that we all were created as natural creatures to live in this natural world, but we are saved into a totally different world, a spiritual world, which we cannot sense, understand or imagine with our physical or mental nature. Our Salvation may then also be viewed as our transition from our natural creature to a totally different, spiritual creature. The natural creature cannot walk on the water (Mt. 14:25), go through a shut door (Jn. 20:19) or rise up into the air without any mechanical means, (Lk. 24:51) etc. The spiritual creature can. All the following chapters of this book should be read and pondered with this monumental, logic defying fact and truth in mind and in heart.

CHAPTER 2

REDEMPTION OF MAN

DEFINITIONS

The REDEMPTION of man shall be understood as a CHANGE OF OWNERSHIP OF MAN from that of Satan to that of God, where God redeemed man through the Blood of Jesus Christ, His Son, (**Rev. 5:9// 1Pet. 1:18,19**) and opened the door for that man to be reconciled back to God. (**Rom. 5:10// 2Cor. 5:18**) Man can receive his redemption through faith (**Eph. 2:8**) AND the decision of his will to confess that faith with his own mouth (**Rom. 10:9,10**) and thereby choose life and not death. (**Deut. 30:19**) This new possession of God is then sealed by His Spirit. (**Eph. 1:13**)

Furthermore, the REDEMPTION of man shall be understood as a CHANGE IN THE SPIRIT OF MAN which spirit is now RESURRECTED, MADE ALIVE by being born from above by the Spirit of God (**Jn. 3:3**) and where this Holy Spirit of God now dwells and makes that man the Temple of God. (**1Cor. 3:16**) There is now deposited into the **SPIRIT** of that man a New Life from Heaven which is from God Himself and which was never there before, except for the First Adam, who had the Spirit of God in all his being, but he lost Him through his disobedience to God and became a soul-ish, sinful man.

Furthermore, the REDEMPTION of man shall be understood as THE BEGINNING OF A CHANGE IN THE SOUL OF MAN by receiving the *“earnest of the Spirit”* which was given to his HEART which is the organ of his SOUL. (**2Cor. 1:22**) We may also visualize this gift as a *“vanguard of the Spirit”* which must in time fill his whole soul and subdue it! We may also visualize this gift as a *“seed of the Kingdom of God”* which Kingdom is in the spirit of the redeemed man and now must be enforced into his soul by seeking first the

Kingdom. (Mt. 6:33) The Spirit must then subdue his entire soul and eradicate the existing kingdom of the powers of darkness and evil which powers have been ruling his soul during all of his past pagan life and have NOT departed from his soul at his redemption or at his water baptism.

Therefore, the REDEMPTION of man shall also be understood as THE BEGINNING OF MAN'S FULL SALVATION where his SOUL and BODY will also be similarly reborn, resurrected, delivered from death and corruption, cleansed, renewed, recreated and transformed by the same Spirit of God. This will happen at a later time and in a uniquely different process for the soul and for the body.

His SOUL will be delivered, cleansed, revived, recreated and thus perfected through overcoming (Rev. 2:7,11,17, 26; 3:5,12,21) by denying of his self and taking up his cross and following the Lord daily (Lk. 9:23), by working out his own Salvation in fear and trembling. (Phil. 2:12b) This process may also be summarized by saying: By fighting a good fight of faith (see more in Chapter 3).

His BODY will be delivered from death and corruption, transformed, recreated and glorified at his rapture. (1Cor. 15:53// Phil. 3:20,21)

His OWN HUMAN SPIRIT though it is revived from above must also grow up and be cleansed and perfected as his soul must. The spirit of a redeemed man is not yet one with the Spirit of God though His Spirit dwells there. His conscience may yet be weak and defiled. (1Cor. 8:7// Tit. 1:15; Titus does not write about pagans as vs. 16 shows) His intuition and communion are still “non-functioning” after his redemption. These parts of man’s spirit need the same strengthening, maturing, cleansing and perfecting as the three parts of his soul need, that is, his mind, heart and will.

There are therefore two basic truths that influence every true believer from the time of his redemption right unto the end of his Full Salvation and they are the following:

a) The Word of God tells us ***“That if you will confess with your mouth the Lord Jesus and shall believe in***

your heart that God has raised Him from the dead, you shall be saved (redeemed). For with the heart man (1) believes unto righteousness, and with the mouth (2) confession is made unto salvation (redemption).” (Rom. 10:9,10)

In response to our **(1) faith** and to our **(2) confession**, which confession is THE WORK OF OUR FAITH, we are “born-again” by the Spirit of God (**Jn. 3:3**) and sealed with that Spirit of Promise as a new possession of God. (**Eph. 1:13**)

This is OUR REDEMPTION which is THE BEGINNING OF OUR FULL SALVATION, NOT ITS END! The end of our Full Salvation will be the end of our faith (**1Pet. 1:9**) and of the works of our faith! We will not need new or more faith any longer because being fully saved, we will be perfect in all three parts of our being and will live the Eternal Life; our faith was needed to guide us to that Life and the works of our faith have brought us there.

Our Saviour paid in full the price demanded by God and thus we are redeemed in full. Satan has lost his legal possession of us which he had while we were yet pagans! Yet, Satan has not lost all his legal possessions in us (see more later).

It is very important to see and realize at this point that had we believed in the Lord but never confessed that faith with our mouth, we would not have been redeemed! The above truth also means that those, who believed in the Saviour intellectually, mentally – in their mind and not in their heart – were never “born-again”, they never received the Spirit of God into their spirit and thus were never redeemed! They do not belong to Christ (**Rom. 8:9b**), but remain pagans that have received some religious information from the Bible or from the Church and believed that information in their mind and understanding. They are often called “paper Christians”, that believed in Christ, yet, never received the Holy Spirit (**Acts 19:1,2**); and there might be multitudes of them.

This fact also shows the utmost importance for us not to confuse various organs of our soul and of our spirit as it

may lead to very grave errors, to our self-deception and even to our destruction and death. Also, what we believe in our mind and what we believe in our heart may be two completely different things. Furthermore, faith comes from our conscience into our heart, not into our mind (see more on p. 61^[8] and in “Truth about Salvation^[9]”).

b) The Word of God also tells us clearly that ***“That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit.”*** (Jn. 3:6)

Therefore, we must at this point make the following important declaration, namely, that at this beginning stage of our Salvation, which means, at our Redemption...

WE ARE “BORN-AGAIN” IN OUR SPIRIT ONLY AND NOT IN OUR SOUL! **OUR SOUL IS NOT SPIRIT!** (1Thes. 5:23) THEREFORE, OUR SOUL MUST BE “BORN-AGAIN”, RENEWED BY THE SPIRIT AND WORD OF GOD IN A DIFFERENT (slower, more painful) PROCESS! THE RESULT OF THIS PROCESS IS THE FULL SALVATION, FULL DELIVERANCE, FULL CLEANSING, FULL REVIVAL OF OUR ALREADY REDEEMED (paid for by Blood) SOUL. (see more in Chapter 3)

I MUST AGAIN REPEAT THAT THE KINGDOM OF THE POWERS OF DARKNESS AND EVIL IN OUR SOUL, OUR SINFUL NATURE, OUR FLESH, WAS NOT DESTROYED OR ERADICATED BY OUR REDEMPTION, BY BEING “BORN-AGAIN” IN OUR SPIRIT OR BY BEING BAPTIZED IN WATER.

These above two facts and truths are very important for us to realize and remember for the rest of our Christian life. They do affect our daily life, our destiny and also the way on which we reach our destiny.

The concluding Truth from the Lord and His Word, which is NEVER PREACHED, TAUGHT OR EXPLAINED because it cannot be seen, understood and thus believed by natural human soul, is this:

A REDEEMED MAN IS NOT A FULLY SAVED MAN AS YET!
ANY REDEEMED MAN HAS THE POWER TO LOSE HIS SALVATION
AND LIFE ETERNAL BY HIS OWN WILL AND DECISIONS!

The above truth is based on the Scripture which is absolutely clear concerning this fact, which will be presented and discussed in more detail in the following Chapters. The fact that the above Scriptural truth is never preached and believers are never warned is another “great victory” of Satan and another proof of our pride. Satan managed to concoct this most terrible deception and through it to keep multitudes of believers in the danger of losing their life eternal! How many has he already claimed back? Only the Lord knows.

REALITY OF OUR SPIRIT

Our spirit is the most intelligent, most knowledgeable, most wise, most powerful and the most living organ of our human being after our Redemption. This fact is due to the Presence of the Spirit of God in our spirit. And we know that His Spirit is the Spirit of wisdom, understanding, counsel, might, knowledge and the Spirit of the fear of the Lord. (Is. 11:2)

It is written that “eye has not seen, nor ear heard, neither have entered into the heart (SOUL) of man the things which God has prepared for them that LOVE Him. But God has revealed them unto us (to our SPIRIT) by His Spirit; for the Spirit searches all things, yea, the deep things of God.” (1Cor. 2:9,10)

This Word of God tells us that our SPIRIT knows things which our SOUL (heart and mind) may have no idea about! The intelligence and thus importance and uniqueness of our spirit are further shown in the following Word of God:

“For what man knows the things of man, save the spirit of man which is in him? Even so, the things of God knows no man, but the Spirit of God.” (1Cor. 2:11)

In other words, our spirit knows all things about us, even the things we (in our soul) do not know about ourselves! Let us realize the importance and the role of our spirit in our Salvation. The next two verses (12,13) tell us that ***“we have received not the spirit of the world (into our spirit), but the Spirit which is of God; that we might know the things that are freely given to us of God. Which things we also speak, not in the words which man’s wisdom (soul-mind) teaches, but which the Holy Spirit (from our spirit) teaches; comparing spiritual things with spiritual.”***

The “worthlessness” of our natural soul is due to the fact that even after our Redemption, our soul is still ruled or guided or influenced by the spirits of the world and by the powers of darkness and evil through their deceptions; it is not ruled by the Spirit of God. This fact is also confirmed in the next two verses of the Word of God which tell us:

“But the natural man (natural soul) receives not the things of the Spirit of God, for they are foolishness unto him, neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned. But he that is spiritual (draws his knowledge, wisdom, intelligence, power and life from his spirit) judges all things, yet he himself is judged of no man.” (1Cor. 2:14,15)

Going into deeper things and facts about the spirit, let us add to the above the following light from the Word: ***“It is the Spirit that quickens (brings to life), the flesh (including blood where our old life is – Lev. 17:14) profits nothing; the WORDS that I speak unto you they are SPIRIT and they are LIFE.” (Jn. 6:63).***

This corresponds with the Word of God which testifies about Itself saying: ***“For the Word of God is quickening (living, life bringing)...” (Heb. 4:12)***

The true spiritual believers are promised by the Word of God to be like Our Lord even to speak like Him, to speak Spirit and Life. The Lord says:

“He that believes on Me AS THE SCRIPTURE HAS SAID, out of his belly (where our spiritual, innermost being is located) shall flow rivers of LIVING WATER.” (Jn. 7:38)

The very next verse (39) indicates that the Lord spoke of His Spirit, Who is dwelling in us. “Living water” represents HIS WORD WHICH WE LIVE (Eph. 5:26) and which does not just sit in our memory. And “rivers” represent the true abundance of His Living Word within us. What now needs our true attention is the fact that the Lord had given us a condition for this to be true in us. We have to believe on Him AS THE SCRIPTURE HAS SAID! In multitudes of believers this is NOT true; therefore, there are no rivers of living water in them. This will be further discussed in Chapter 3.

When we now consider the above referenced Words of God, we must note the following. Our natural life is in our blood, (Lev. 17:14) therefore, our natural, soulish life profits NOTHING! The spirits that occupy, rule or otherwise direct or influence our soul after our Redemption are not of God, they form the “FLESH” OF OUR SOUL. The “flesh”, its origin, its character and activity within us will be discussed later on.

Our words that come out of our natural soul are neither Spirit nor Life, they are (spiritual) death! This fact has a tremendous significance in all our Christian life on earth. It determines the level of our spiritual life and thus the kind of earthly life that we live. It also determines our destiny and our way to it. If this is not THE MOST IMPORTANT ISSUE in our entire Christian life, then I truly do not know what is.

<p>THE SPIRIT OF GOD IN OUR SPIRIT IS OUR GUARANTEE THAT WE HAVE <u>EVERYTHING</u> THAT WE NEED, BOTH NOW AND IN OUR FUTURE! GOD HAD ALREADY SUPPLIED ALL OUR NEEDS <u>IN</u> CHRIST JESUS (Phil. 4:19) AND ALL HIS RICHES ARE AVAILABLE TO US <u>IN HIMSELF</u>, BUT NOT OUTSIDE OF HIMSELF.</p>

THE ALL IMPORTANT QUESTION FOR US IS THIS: ARE WE ABLE TO DRAW FROM THESE VAST RICHES OF CHRIST, FROM THIS ENDLESS TREASURE OF GOD AND USE THEM IN OUR EARTHLY LIFE? USE THEM IN THE LIFE OF OUR SOUL AND ALSO OF OUR BODY? IF IT IS POSSIBLE, WHICH IT IS, THEN HOW CAN WE DO IT?

We know in our many life experiences that we may not be receiving many of the things we desire from God. May we ask, why not? But the question rather is: Are we IN Christ experientially, livingly or only doctrinally? If we understand and believe written doctrines, then we are IN Christ only doctrinally, potentially, but not in the life of our soul since such a mental understanding and belief have not given us any living experiences. It is like living on a Paradise Island OR reading about it OR "being there" with our finger on the map. Is there a difference?

WE CANNOT POSSIBLY HOPE THAT READING, HEARING AND EVEN BELIEVING ANY BIBLICAL DOCTRINE HAS MADE THE NECESSARY CHANGE IN THE LIFE OF OUR SPIRIT OR SOUL!

Equally, no amount of preaching alone will do any living change in our soul. It may make a change in our knowledge, understanding and may increase our faith, but no spiritual work in our soul is done just by reading, hearing, understanding or believing some words or letters from the Bible. (**Jam. 1:22-24**) Hence, we cannot draw from Christ His Life which contains all His riches just because we have drawn more knowledge from the Bible! THE WORK OF THE SPIRIT IN OUR SOUL is absolutely necessary that we may apprehend the Life hidden in the letters which we read or hear or intellectually understand. The necessary work is almost always done in our daily practical life and not necessarily in the places (ex. church auditoria) where we had received the new knowledge or even the new faith.

Let me present at this place a living example from the time of Christ's Crucifixion and its significance with respect

to this very question of gaining access to His Life Eternal and to His spiritual riches.

When Our Lord gave up His Spirit and died on the Cross of Calvary, the New Testament being in His Blood came into power. (Mt. 26:28// Mk. 14:24// Lk. 22:20// 1Cor. 11:25) But another event took place at the same time – the veil which was in the Temple dividing the Holy Place from the Most Holy Place was RENT into two from the top to the bottom. (Mt. 27:50,51// Mk. 15:37,38)

The veil separated the Most Holy Place, the Presence of God, from the Holy Place where God was not present. When God rent it, He, through the Blood of Christ, opened our way to Himself, to His Living Presence for every true believer that overcomes!

This physical veil in the Old Testament Temple represents the spiritual veil in the New Testament Temple where WE ARE that Temple. (1Cor. 3:16,17) And the same veil is found between our SPIRIT where God is present and our SOUL where God is not present at the time of our Redemption. This OUR VEIL MUST ALSO BE RENT in order for us to gain access to the Presence of God in our spirit. OUR VEIL IS OUR FLESH, our sinful nature, our old man. It is a spiritual veil formed by the spirits of evil and darkness in our redeemed soul. It blinds our minds and covers our hearts (2Cor. 3:14-16) and it is also being RENT (PIERCED) AS WE DIE ON OUR CROSS. It is rent (pierced) chiefly by the Word of God. (Mt. 16:24// Heb. 4:12// Rev. 1:16, sword = Word of God)

The Lord says that we may obtain His Life and all the riches and treasures of His Life provided to us IN Himself THROUGH OUR VEIL. This veil, this divider, this barrier between our soul and spirit must be destroyed and it is destroyed by the process of the SALVATION OF OUR SOUL which process must follow our Redemption and our water baptism. It is defined and described in Chapter 3 and also in later Chapters. It is THE MOST IMPORTANT PART OF THE MOST IMPORTANT ISSUE in the life of all believers. Do we see that fact? And may we ask why it is the most important part?

THE GREATEST DECEPTION OF THE DEVIL INFLUENCING THE CHURCH FOR MANY CENTURIES IS ABOUT THE SALVATION OF OUR SOUL, NOT ABOUT THE SALVATION OF OUR SPIRIT, WHICH IS OUR REDEMPTION. IF WE IGNORE THIS MOST IMPORTANT ISSUE OF OUR LIFE AS REDEEMED BELIEVERS, WE COMMIT PERHAPS THE GREATEST BLUNDER OF OUR CHRISTIANITY WITH UNFORESEEN AND EXTREMELY GRAVE CONSEQUENCES WHEREBY MANY BELIEVERS MIGHT LOSE THEIR SALVATION AND ETERNAL LIFE DUE TO THIS DEEP DECEPTION OF THE DEVIL.

Since the Full Salvation of the believer's SOUL is conditional also to his water baptism, we will first present the issue of water baptism and its true significance.

WATER BAPTISM

The Word of God tells us clearly the following:

1. "He who believes (is redeemed) AND IS BAPTIZED shall be saved; but he that believes not (is not redeemed and thus not baptized) shall be DAMNED." (Mk. 16:16)

2. "And JESUS, when HE WAS BAPTIZED, went up straightway out of the water:" (Mt. 3:16a// Mk. 1:9,10)

These two truths of the Word of God show us the very great importance of the water baptism and it is the following.

THE FIRST TRUTH from **Mk. 16:16** is this:

THOSE, WHO BELIEVED IN THE LORD JESUS CHRIST, BUT WERE NOT BAPTIZED DURING THEIR EARHTLY LIFE OR IN ACCORDANCE WITH THE SCRIPTURE, MAY NOT ALL BE SAVED!

The above truth touches three kinds of people:

1) Children, who died before the age of their accountability or consciousness of sin, could not sin and thus had

nothing to repent of. They did not need to be baptized since they were saved as they were when they died. They received the free gift of justification unto life without repentance provided by the Saviour. (Rom. 5:18) All those, who later in their age had become conscious of sin and started to commit sins, needed to repent and be baptized,

2) Men, who believed in their heart and had no real chance, no time to be baptized as was the case with the criminal crucified on the right hand side of Our Lord. (Lk. 23:39-43) Here belong also those men that shall ***“call on the Name of the Lord”*** (Acts 2:21// Rom. 10:13) in dangerous circumstances (Tribulation) where their lives might be at stake or they might call in the midst of sheer terror having no chances for baptism. They all will be subjected to the process of overcoming—perfecting their souls after their physical death. (see details on pages 206–208^[8])

3) Believers, who do not believe in baptism, or do not care, or have other reasons to procrastinate or were not baptized by immersion (Mk. 1:9// Rom. 6:4// Col. 2:12// Jos. 3:17) or were not baptized in the Name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit (Mt. 28:19) OR in the Name of Jesus Christ. (Acts 2:38) All these, when they die in this state of not being baptized at all or not being baptized according to the Scripture, may be given the same chance of overcoming—perfecting their soul after death as those in point 2) above. This applies especially to all those that were deceived or misled by others, or that were ignorant about this Commandment of the Scripture due to no fault of their own. They were not taught the Scripture or led into Its Truth by their leaders. All these may receive the light from the Lord concerning their old natural man and overcoming after their physical death IF they have not fallen away before they die physically. (Heb. 6:4-6) If they have fallen away before they die physically, then they have lost their Salvation before their physical death (see more later).

THE SECOND TRUTH is that even Jesus, the Son of God, had to be baptized! Why? Was He not born of the

Holy Spirit? Was He not full of the Holy Spirit? What then was the purpose for His baptism? I see in my spirit three reasons for His baptism and they are the following:

1) He needed to be ANOINTED for His Mission of man's Salvation by the Power of the Holy Spirit! Up to that point, strictly speaking, Jesus was not yet "The Christ" which means "THE ANOINTED ONE". His Anointing after His water baptism was tested right away in the wilderness by Satan, who began by asking Him the stupid question: "*If Thou be the Son of God...*" (Mt. 4:3).

2) By His baptism He signified the necessity of His future death and resurrection, the dying of the OLD and sinful CREATION including man as a natural creature, and the beginning of a NEW CREATION including our New Man – new creature (2Cor. 5:17) with his New Life rising out of death.

3) He gave His answer to all the believers, who would follow Him according to the Scripture. (Mt. 16:24// Mk. 8:34// Lk. 9:23) Without baptism we cannot receive the (additional) gift of the Holy Spirit (Acts 2:38), which means, the anointing for our mission in earthly life which mission includes the Full Salvation of our redeemed soul. Though we may be born-again and the Holy Spirit dwelling in us (in our spirit), yet we need His anointing and power to ENABLE US to deny our self and take up our cross and follow Him.

We may now declare the truth that is vitally connected with THE MOST IMPORTANT ISSUE of our Christian life discussed in this book. That truth is the following:

IF WE ARE NOT BAPTIZED BY IMMERSION (Mt. 3:16a), WE CANNOT RECEIVE THE POWER – THE ANOINTING OF THE HOLY SPIRIT – TO EVEN BEGIN THE VITAL PROCESS OF THE FULL SALVATION OF OUR REDEEMED SOUL. WE THUS CANNOT FOLLOW OUR LORD JESUS CHRIST BECAUSE WE HAVE NO POWER TO DENY OUR SELF AND TO TAKE UP OUR CROSS AND FOLLOW HIM (Mt. 16:24), OBEY HIM (Heb. 5:9) AND TO WORK OUT OUR OWN SALVATION WITH FEAR AND TREMBLING! (Phil. 2:12)

The significance of our water baptism is that we are baptized into Jesus Christ, into His death, buried with Him into death, so that ***“...like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the Glory of the Father, EVEN SO WE also should walk in NEWNESS OF LIFE”*** (Rom. 6:3,4)

Again, if the above Word of God is for us only a “written line in a book” which we read, agree with and believe, there cannot be any walk in any New Life since THAT NEW LIFE IS MISSING IN OUR SOUL! To walk in the “newness of Life” means to live the Life, which is New in our SPIRIT and MUST also become the New Life of our SOUL, for our earthly walk. This may also be viewed as a “Resurrection of our soul”! (see more in Chapter 3)

The truthful conclusion to the significance of water baptism is that it is our public declaration of our faith to die to the old life of our natural soul and be resurrected to the New Life in our soul. This process takes our entire Christian earthly life. But it is definitely and absolutely IMPOSSIBLE FOR OUR OLD NATURAL SOUL TO LIVE THE LIFE OF GOD’S SPIRIT and thus to “WALK IN NEWNESS OF THAT LIFE”.

THERE IS A WORLD OF DIFFERENCE BETWEEN A NATURAL SOUL AND A SPIRITUAL SOUL. **WE DO NOT GAIN THE SPIRITUAL SOUL** JUST BY BELIEVING IN THE LORD JESUS CHRIST OR BEING BAPTIZED IN WATER. WE ALL HAVE LIVED IN OUR NATURAL SOUL UNTIL OUR WATER BAPTISM. ONLY AFTER OUR BAPTISM, WE HAVE RECEIVED THE POWER FOR THE TRANSFORMATION OF OUR SOUL FROM THE NATURAL TO THE SPIRITUAL ONE.

YET MOST BELIEVERS CONTINUE LIVING IN THEIR NATURAL SOUL AFTER THEIR REDEMPTION AND BAPTISM! THAT IS WHY THEY ARE CALLED “SOULISH, CARNAL, NATURAL BELIEVERS” AND THEY ARE UNAWARE OF IT. THEY CONTINUE IN THEIR OLD HABITS, OLD LIFE WALKING ON THE OLD WAY –THE BROAD WAY– WHERE THEY CAN DO WHAT THEIR SOUL DESIRES, SO IT IS A “COMFORTABLE CHRISTIAN LIFE”. THEY DO NOT EVEN KNOW THE DIFFERENCE BETWEEN THE NATURAL AND SPIRITUAL SOUL AND NOBODY TELLS THEM ANYTHING! WHY?

MANY OF THEIR MINISTERS THEMSELVES DO NOT SEE AND UNDERSTAND THE DIFFERENCE BETWEEN THE SPIRITUAL AND THE NATURAL (SOULISH) LIFE THOUGH IT IS CLEARLY DECLARED IN THE FIRST LETTER OF PAUL TO THE CHURCH IN CORINTH. HENCE, THEY ARE UNABLE TO GUIDE THEIR CARNAL "SHEEP" IN THIS EXTREMELY IMPORTANT TRANSFORMATION PROCESS FROM THE NATURAL TO THE SPIRITUAL LIFE.

THE **NATURAL SOUL** LIVES THE NATURAL LIFE WHICH IS A **CREATED** LIFE AND WAS DEFILED, CORRUPTED IN ADAM. IT IS A SINFUL, THEREFORE, MORTAL LIFE AND IT MAY BECOME A VERY RELIGIOUS LIFE. But IF YOU WILL SAVE THIS NATURAL LIFE, YOU WILL LOSE IT! (Mt. 16:25// Mk. 8:35// Lk. 9:24; 17:33)

THE **SPIRITUAL SOUL** LIVES THE ETERNAL LIFE OF GOD WHICH IS AN **UNCREATED** LIFE, THE LIFE OF GOD HIMSELF. IT IS A SINLESS, THEREFORE, DEATHLESS LIFE WITHOUT END. IF YOU LOSE YOUR NATURAL LIFE FOR CHRIST'S SAKE, YOU SHALL FIND IT... THIS LIFE OF GOD!

These above facts and truths will become more and more clear when connected with the facts and truths in the following Chapter 3.

CHAPTER 3

SALVATION OF MAN

DEFINITIONS

The SALVATION of man shall be understood as a RE-VIVAL OR RESURRECTION (cleansing, deliverance, recreation, perfecting) OF THE **ALREADY REDEEMED SOUL** OF MAN. It follows the Redemption of man where only his spirit was revived, resurrected by the Presence of the Holy Spirit. Now his soul (heart, mind and will) must follow his spirit.

Furthermore, and most importantly as to the practical side of Salvation, the start of this Salvation process shall be understood as THE START OF MAN'S SEEING AND UNDERSTANDING THE SPIRIT!

When the man in **Jn. 9:25b** said: “**...one thing I know, that, whereas I was blind, now I see**”, it indicated his seeing as a baby could see. We got our spiritual eyesight at our Redemption when we saw Jesus as Saviour, but not as LORD, though we called Him Lord! Also, we saw and understood nothing else in spirit; this baby eyesight cannot carry us beyond our spiritual crib.

My seeing and understanding in spirit started when it pleased God: “**to REVEAL His Son in me**”, to show Him to me. (**Gal. 1:16a**) My SOUL started to see Christ as MY LORD shortly after my water baptism. He had power and authority to direct and rule my life and I had the duty to serve Him and be obedient to Him and to His Word. This was a totally different SEEING, and this seeing must become clearer and deeper as we mature and see OUR responsibilities to God and not only God's promises to us.

The SALVATION of man shall also be understood as the FINAL MATURING OF THE NEW MAN with a NEW SPIRIT, THEN A NEW SOUL AND THEN ALSO A NEW BODY. THIS BELIEVER BECOMES A MATURE SON OF GOD AND THEREBY FULFILLS THE FINAL AND ETERNAL PURPOSE OF GOD FOR MAN.

The process of the Salvation of our soul should begin shortly after our water baptism. When we receive this gift of the Spirit, we receive, as it were, our Captain with Whom we must subdue and eradicate all powers which are enemies of God in our soul, just as Joshua did when he began to occupy the Promised Land and eradicate all the enemy powers therein! (**Acts 2:38// Jos. 5:13-15**) Note that our Captain (the Holy Spirit) has a sword drawn in His hand, which sword is the Word of God. (**Heb. 4:12// Ex. 15:3// Mt. 10:34// Rev. 1:16**)

Now, the Promised Land for Israel in the Old Testament is a fore-picture of the Kingdom of God for the believer in the New Testament. The Promised Land was physical; the Kingdom of God is first spiritual and IT IS WITHIN US, within our SPIRIT. (**Lk. 17:21**) At our Redemption, this Kingdom comes into our spirit with the Spirit of God; then it is to be ENFORCED into our whole SOUL and subdue it and rule therein! We then bring this spiritual Kingdom from our soul into the physical Kingdom on earth, enforce it and rule there together with Christ for 1000 years. (**Rev. 20:6**) If this Kingdom is not first set-up and ruling in our own soul, we will have nothing to bring to the physical Kingdom of Heaven on earth and we will be unable to rule therein.

If the above were not true then most of the New Testament would lose its meaning, chiefly the Epistles of Paul, Peter and John. The Spirit of the Lord gave them the light and truth about the human, NATURAL SOUL of believers, its depravity, continued sinful nature, continued resistance to the Will of God, its capacity to reject what comes from God and does not satisfy that soul, to even choose death and evil rather than life and good! (**Deut. 30:19**) Our soul is thus capable of forfeiting that which it may have already received from God... including its own Salvation! Why is it so?

OUR FREE WILL AND ITS DECISIONS ARE NEVER TAKEN FROM US BY GOD, WHO GAVE IT. OUR <u>NATURAL WILL</u> RETAINS ITS POWER TO OPPOSE GOD AT ANY TIME, ANY PLACE AND UNDER ANY CONDITIONS! IT IS QUITE ABLE TO OPPOSE OR NEGLECT THE WORD OF GOD AND ALL HIS COMMANDMENTS!

Our free will can take our natural life and destiny very lightly; it can also keep us from seeking first the Lord, His truth and His righteousness. If our free will had no such power to reject what God offers or gives or requires from man, then pagans and carnal Christians could not exist! Numerous passages in the Scripture could not exist as well, such as **Jer. 6:16,17; 18:11-13// Mt. 25:41-46// 1Cor. 2:14,15; 3:1-3// 2Pet. 3:9** and many, many others. Do we SEE this fact? Do we believe it in our heart and mind? Really?

REALITY OF OUR SOUL

Firstly, the Lord desires us to SEE and understand His basic Light about our SOUL.

Adam and Eve were innocent, clean and spiritual in all three parts of their being: spirit, soul and body. After their disobedience and fall, all three parts lost their spiritual character and living fellowship with God in losing the Spirit of God from their spirit, soul and body. Before their fall, they had the “Nature-Character” of God, they were sinless, had their life IN GOD and they served Him. Through their disobedience to God and obedience to Satan, they acquired the “nature-character” of Satan. They became “natural” and sinful in their spirit, soul and also mortal in body; they lost their life IN GOD and began to serve Satan. In their “new” natural and sinful state they could not serve God even if they would have wanted to. (**Rom. 6:16**)

THIS was the death of Adam. In his spirit he was separated from God immediately; in body he died as a 930 year old. (**Gen. 5:5**) Therefore, God did not allow Adam and Eve to eat from the tree of life and live for ever in that sinful, corrupted state, but drove them out from the Garden and from His Presence. (**Gen. 3:22-24**)

Satan appealed to the desire of Eve’s SOUL, to her heart’s desire and mind’s imagination and thereby deceived

her. (**Gen. 3:6**) Adam's SOUL (heart) was not deceived as Eve's was, yet he disobeyed God in eating the fruit also (**1Tim. 2:14**) because HE LOVED EVE MORE THAN GOD!

MAN'S BEING – BODY, SOUL, SPIRIT – HAD BECOME A LEGAL OWNERSHIP OF SATAN AND MAN'S SOUL HAD BECOME THE PRINCIPAL TERRITORY OF ALL SATAN'S OPERATIONS, EVIL DEEDS, PLOTS AND DECEPTIONS IN MAN'S LIFE!

MAN HAD BECOME SIN, UNABLE TO GET BACK TO GOD, HAVE FELLOWSHIP WITH HIM AND LIVE GOD'S LIFE AGAIN. MAN WAS DOOMED AND THERE WAS "NO WAY" TO BRING HIM BACK!

The Lord had not died for our sins only so that we may be forgiven our sins, but for our WHOLE BEING – spirit, soul and body, which was destroyed by Satan by being severed from God's Spirit through man's disobedience. Man became natural, now he has to become spiritual again. Hence, the True and Full Salvation of man includes the SALVATION of our SPIRIT, SOUL and of our BODY! All three must be recovered, resurrected, recreated and preserved blameless unto the Coming of Our Lord. (**1Thes. 5:23**)

At our Redemption, we were reconciled to God, our vital link to God was restored, we were made alive to God again, we could start living our life IN GOD again... but ONLY IN OUR SPIRIT, which we call the "born-again" experience. At our Redemption, our BODY and SOUL remained "un-renewed"; their life was NOT IN GOD as yet, being still in the natural state. All our physical and mental sicknesses and infirmities also point to this spiritual fact. There is no sickness or infirmity of any kind in the Spirit of God and where He dwells and rules. Hence, we must wait for their restoration, resurrection, salvation which will be done when God's Spirit takes HIS DOMINION in all parts of our being and they become spiritual. So, God starts our Salvation in our SPIRIT, continues with our SOUL and ends with our BODY.

Since our soul remains natural after our Redemption and water baptism, we must then focus on the SALVATION

OF OUR SOUL and what it takes to accomplish it according to the Word of God. But our soul has its own WILL which can oppose God. That is why God works in us so that we would be WILLING to do His pleasure and not always our own. (Phil. 2:13)

Here is an important example from the Word of God showing what our soul is capable of doing and what its true spiritual state is after we have been born-again (redeemed) and baptized. When God tells us to ***“bring into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ”*** (2Cor. 10:5), it means that the thoughts in our mind or heart, which are organs of our SOUL, are NOT OF CHRIST because THEY DO NOT OBEY HIM. If they are not of Christ, then of whom are they? Well, they are of OUR SELF and also of the powers of darkness and evil to the degree to which our mind and heart are yet ruled or influenced by those powers and are neither delivered nor cleansed from them.

But if our thoughts are not of Christ, then THEY ARE NOT OF THE WORD OF GOD! Why? Because CHRIST IS THE WORD OF GOD! (Jn. 1:1,14// Rev. 19:13) Christ is not the letters, but the Life, the Truth, the Way, the true meaning of the letters. Therefore...

THE THOUGHTS OF OUR NATURAL SOUL ARE NOT CAPABLE OF ACHIEVING THE LIFE AND THE TRUE MEANING OF THE WORD OF GOD! WHEN WE STUDY, TEACH AND PREACH THE WORD THROUGH OUR NATURAL SOUL, WE DO NOT TEACH OR PREACH THE SPIRITUAL TRUTH OF THE WORD, BUT OUR TRUTH, WHAT WE UNDERSTAND TO BE THE TRUTH! IT MAY BE GOOD AND LOGICAL, BUT IT CANNOT CONVEY THE DEPTH AND THE TRUE MEANING OF THE SPIRITUAL AND FULL TRUTH AS BREATHED BY THE SPIRIT. IT IS SOULISH TRUTH, RELIGIOUS TRUTH, INTELLECTUAL TRUTH, BUT NOT SPIRITUAL TRUTH.

How is it possible? If after our Redemption we had not followed the Lord according to His Word in Mt. 16:24, then we must realize that our cross was never brought into action in our soul and, therefore...

OUR SOUL HAS BECOME RELIGIOUS,
BUT NOT CRUCIFIED, NOT HOLY, NOT RIGHTEOUS!

What does that mean? The Lord shows the following.

THE RELIGIOUS SOUL is a soul in which its natural, fleshly character had not disappeared but had become religious. It studies and acquires the knowledge of the Bible, it understands the Word and Christianity in its own way, it may “work for the Lord” and be engaged in many activities of its church or community, it sees all its ways clean and correct, but it sees nothing in spirit, understands nothing in spirit and cares not for the spirit, yet, it may talk a lot about the Spirit. Religious soul lives by its religious flesh. But the works of the flesh are strife causing divisions, separations of brethren so that one cannot get along with another. If this religious soul cannot get along with a brother, it separates itself from him, which is the easiest and quickest “solution”. Such a religious soul will never search for and deal with the reasons for their separation because it fears truth and elevates its own beliefs above all heavens. Such a soul may preach even about the Cross, but denies it in its own life.

THE CRUCIFIED SOUL is a soul delivered from the powers of evil and darkness within itself, from its “flesh”... pride, fears, hypocrisy, selfishness, self-righteousness, stubbornness, disobedience, arrogance, foolishness, and so on. That soul is now occupied, ruled and guided by the Spirit of the Lord, Who gained access to our soul from our spirit! It is our spirit which is the “candle of the Lord” searching all our inward parts, and not our soul. (Pr. 20:27)

The Full Salvation of our soul takes the rest of our earthly lifetime and then it continues after our rapture! (see more later) Our soul is then fully governed by the Spirit of Christ and HE LIVES in and through our soul. (Gal. 2:20) Only with this PERFECTED SOUL we may be considered having **“no spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing”** (Eph. 5:27) and never before. Now, the perfected soul lives differently, behaves differently, thinks differently, responds (to others) dif-

ferently, prays differently, sees, hears and understands differently. This “fruit” proves the spiritual soul and by this fruit it is easily recognizable from a natural soul.

One consequence of our soul not being crucified results in the well known and deep divisions and separations within the Church, which no man can bridge, eliminate or heal. We may have never seen, understood and realized why there are such divisions within the Church of Jesus Christ while all of its various factions, denominations, organizations, sects and groups are based on One and the same Book. Well...

ALL THE DIVISIONS, SEPARATIONS, CONFUSIONS, DIFFERENCES IN DOCTRINES AND UNDERSTANDING IN THE CHURCH OF JESUS CHRIST, ALL THE DIFFERENT ROADS, DIRECTIONS AND DECISIONS THAT BELIEVERS TAKE, ALL THIS **TRAGEDY OF BELIEVERS** IS DUE TO THEIR UNCRUCIFIED, UNRENEWED, UNCLEANSED NATURAL SOULS!

SUCH HEARTS AND MINDS PRODUCE THOUGHTS, REASONING, PREJUDICES, JUDGMENTS, SPECULATIONS, CONVICTIONS AND THEN THE ENSUING TEACHINGS AND SERMONS WHICH ARE **NOT OF CHRIST, NOT OF THE TRUTH, NOT OF THE SPIRIT, NOT OF THE WORD OF GOD.**

The “religious” preachers, teachers and evangelists become lecturers, intellectual or social educators not seeing and realizing that **WE CANNOT REACH ANY SPIRITUAL TRUTH AND GROWTH BY ANY INTELLECTUAL PROCESS!**

If we preach reading from our notes that we had prepared in our study, though they may be theologically correct, it can never bring any spiritual fruit. Because **“out of the abundance of (our experiences with the Lord in) the heart the mouth speaks” (Mt. 12:34)** and not out of the abundance of written notes with logical and intellectual explanations from our mind. Do we see this fact? **NO!** Believers then become listeners or students that may increase their knowledge of Biblical information and may even be

amazed at the brilliant reasoning of the preacher, but they remain THE SAME IN SPIRIT AND THEIR SOUL REMAINS NATURAL! Many ministers may be screaming, sweating, striving, persuading believers even running across stages; their profound statements may be accentuated by drums or organs for an additional “effect”. Or they may be calm, composed... and some may keep their hands in the pockets of their pants while speaking about God, Jesus Christ or reading the Word of God... as if God or Jesus Christ were their “buddy” or just “objects” of their “grand theological study and lecturing”! PROUD AND TOTALLY UNPROFITABLE SOULS ARE THEY! Have mercy on such, Lord, for they truly know not what they are doing.

Their soul is still able to receive and understand the letter of the Bible, but it cannot receive and be changed by “*the things of the Spirit of God*” which are hidden in those letters! These things of the Spirit include the LIVING TRUTH, LIVING MEANING of the letter of the Bible. (1Cor. 2:7,14) Quoting the Bible doesn’t mean that either the preacher or the listener lives or is able to live what is quoted. And if neither of them is able to live it, then they cannot have any living understanding of the spiritual truth contained therein.

Let us now get a deeper, more living understanding of the human soul and its natural life in the religious theater.

ABILITY OF OUR SOUL

Our unrenewed, uncrucified, natural soul has abilities that we may not be ready to believe or imagine. They all are DANGEROUS to our Christian life, progress and destiny. Here are some facts.

Few believers know, understand and also experience in their own life that God is endeavouring by His Spirit to form them into the “Image of His Son”, which is His Will and Purpose. (Rom. 8:29) But multitudes of believers including

many ministers may not know or be aware of the fact that THEIR NATURAL SOULS ARE FORMING GOD INTO THEIR OWN IMAGE! THUS THE PROCESS OF THEIR SALVATION IS BEING HINDERED AND THIS BECOMES THEIR PERSONAL **WEIGHT!** (**Heb. 12:1**)HOW IS THAT POSSIBLE?

The Lord has given us a powerful mind. Furthermore, He has also given us another powerful tool – IMAGINATION! Without it man could not go very far in whatever direction he would like to go. We all are creative beings created in the Image of God, Who is the Creator. But whatever we desire to create, we must first imagine or “create” in our own head! An Engineer has to first “see-create-design his structure” in his head, in his imagination before he picks up his pencil and starts drawing and analyzing. A Doctor has to “see-design his operation process” in his head before he picks up his scalpel. A Composer must first “see-hear-create his symphony” in his head and imagination before he even starts writing the notes. True? If you do not believe it, ask these professionals.

This unusual ability of our soul is very easily transferred into the field of religion, the field of our religious beliefs, understanding, convictions, imaginations. Once these are formed in our head and soul, all our actions are based on them and follow them. They may conform to many parts of the Scripture, but at the same time be very far from many other passages of the Scripture and from their interdependent spiritual meaning. The longer we run in this new “rut”, the more difficult it is to get out of it and ponder a “new” truth, which may not be new at all, but it is the spiritual and entire truth of the Word as a whole.

We repeat that our ***“natural man (soul) receives not the things of the Spirit of God, for they are foolishness unto him; neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned”***. (1Cor. 2:14)

Therefore, our natural soul rejects any spiritual “new” truth as unacceptable to its logic and understanding and its “sound mind” because our natural soul cannot SEE it!

The Lord desires to show that when we are attending educational institutions (seminaries, theological faculties, etc.), we automatically receive, absorb and form our “intellectual rut” based on, what we might call, a “traditional knowledge”. When, for example, my professor believes that no born-again believer may ever lose his Salvation and presents his “logical proofs” from the Scripture then I am prone to receive it without much pondering or searching other parts of the Scripture or without any other effort on my part to seek the Truth. Why? I imagine that my professor, being older than I and more educated, is more experienced and thus he must know better than I do, otherwise, he would not be a professor at that prestigious institution. Also, what he presents looks totally logical, so, I accept it automatically! My future life and possibly my destiny and the way to it are affected at that very moment. And the future and destiny of many other believers to whom I may be preaching at a later time will also be affected at that very moment! Why?

I will come out of that educational institution with “my own baggage” and I will not be aware of it! I will then keep transferring that same “baggage” to other believers, maybe millions of them, and not be aware of it. Even if some other believer would show me clearly in the Scripture that a born-again believer MAY indeed lose his Salvation, I would NOT BE ABLE TO BELIEVE IT! The truth is that this very example is happening far too often in the life of the Church.

The above example is concerned primarily with the believers whose soul is inclined to reason and walk by logic. It is extremely logical that a believer born by the Spirit of God and sealed with His Spirit could not possibly break that seal and lose that Salvation. Is that true? It is true. YET, IT IS NOT TRUE in the eyes of God. But their natural soul cannot accept it and believe it because it cannot imagine it and thus understand it! What they cannot imagine, see or understand, they cannot believe. But this is Christianity put upside down! Furthermore, their pride will not allow them any flexibility in seeking the Truth! When such believers are shown the passages in the Bible where the loss of Salvation

is clearly taught, they do not know what to do with them! They might try to explain them away to suite their “baggage” or they do not respond to you! They have no power to admit that this might be true, that they may not be infallible. They have no willingness to search any truth beyond their “baggage” or to ask the Lord to open their understanding of the Bible. Man CANNOT open the spiritual understanding of any other man because it takes the Lord Himself to do it. (Lk. 24:45)

We may not realize and register in our natural mind a simple truth that we were all born deceived, dead in spirit and with a darkened mind, heart and will. This spiritually darkened natural mind and heart may still excel in very many areas of our physical, mental, intellectual and emotional life, (engineering, medicine, philosophy, art, music, theology, etc.) BUT the realm of the spirit with its truths and realities is totally closed to them.

OUR <u>NATURAL</u> MIND AND HEART HAVE NO ABILITY AND NO CAPACITY TO PENETRATE, SEE AND COMPREHEND THE VAST REALM OF SPIRITUAL KNOWLEDGE AND WISDOM AVAILABLE TO OUR BORN-AGAIN AND RENEWED SPIRIT.

It takes the Light and Life of Christ in our spirit to first penetrate our natural darkened soul, to enlighten it and thus enable it to start apprehending that spiritual knowledge and wisdom. And WE MUST BE WILLING to receive His Light and Life into our soul. The TRAGEDY of too many born-again believers is that this Light and Life of Christ is being “imprisoned” in their spirit by the flesh of their soul, which soul remains darkened, ignorant, deceived and natural! Such believers cannot grow up, make spiritual progress or mature spiritually even for the rest of their Christian life. It is very easy for them to mistake their theological, biblical, religious knowledge for the Light and Truth revealed by the Lord. Do you see this? No natural man can see this fact.

Before we continue on this topic of the natural and spiritual, of the baby stage or of the mature stage and what it means in the spirit, we must see and realize what the fact of MATURING actually is.

TRUE MATURING OF BELIEVERS IS THEIR GETTING MORE HOLY, MORE GRACIOUS, MORE UNDERSTANDING, MORE WISE, MORE LOVING, MORE SEEING, MORE FORGIVING, MORE COMPASSIONATE, MORE MEEK, MORE TEMPERATE, MORE DILIGENT, MORE WILLING, MORE PERFECT, ETC... HAVING GREATER AND PURER LOVE AND FAITH AND STRONGER SPIRIT.

MATURING MEANS GETTING THE CONSCIOUSNESS OF ALL THE SPIRITS WITHIN AND WITHOUT THE BELIEVER HIMSELF, OF THEIR PURPOSES AND WAYS IN WHICH THEY OPERATE TO ACHIEVE THEIR OWN WILL AND GOALS. THIS INCLUDES THE SPIRIT OF GOD AND ALSO THE SPIRITS OF DARKNESS AND EVIL.

MATURING IS GETTING THE ABILITY TO SEE THE SPIRITUAL WORLD AND TO UNDERSTAND HOW IT FUNCTIONS AND WHY. THIS BRINGS THE ABILITY TO JUDGE RIGHTEOUSLY AND NOT BY WHAT THE BELIEVER CAN SEE WITH HIS EYES OR HEAR WITH HIS EARS OR UNDERSTAND WITH HIS MIND. PHYSICAL SENSES AND MENTAL ABILITIES CANNOT INTERPRET AND JUDGE RIGHTEOUSLY THE SPIRITUAL WORLD, SPIRITUAL FACTS OR SPIRITUAL PROBLEMS. (Is. 11:1-3b-5// Jn. 7:24 etc.)

If we ponder the question of maturing we can find out that it is exactly the same in our physical world. Children have no consciousness of the world and no ability to see it and understand it, no ability to judge anything. Young people should increase in these abilities and knowledge and acquire MORE of everything. The more we mature physically, the more we see and understand this physical world, the more conscious we become of its facts and problems. We are more able to judge wisely and solve its manifold problems. Yet, no matter how mature we become physically, we can never see, hear and understand the spiritual world, never be conscious of it in any way unless we become born-to-it. But when we do become born-to-it, we become spiritual toddlers that see, hear and understand nothing of their "new" spiritual world. Though we may be 50-60-70 years old or more physically, we may still be spiritual children that never matured! Why? Because spiritual maturing is not "automatic" as is the physical maturing where, if we eat, drink, sleep and breathe we grow up without any

further effort on our side. Should we “eat and drink the Word”, not read It, but eat It and drink It; and should we “breathe the Spirit”, we would also live and grow up spiritually. But who is doing it? Our fruits show the truth. But immature believers cannot distinguish their fruits either.

How can then any believer find out whether he is matured or in a baby stage? If year after year he/she has to be told what to do, how to do it, when to do it, where to go, where not to go, what is wise, what is foolish, what is of God, and what is not, what will be profitable, what will not, etc., then he/she is a baby who needs a constant nursing and instructions in real life by his/her tutors, pastors, spiritual advisers, elders or more mature brethren. A mature believer knows all these things in himself and he is able to instruct others. Are you able to see where you are? However, let us also understand that our natural ability to instruct others does not necessarily mean that we are spiritual!

A natural religious soul may produce a vast amount of work for the Lord with a vast amount of time and energy spent. Yet, it never asks the Lord what SPIRITUAL fruit has been produced, whether the fruit of that vast amount of work shall REMAIN or not. (Jn. 15:16) A natural religious man is able to build magnificent, imposing and costly structures, write mountains of books filled with imposing religious knowledge and rake in a lot of money. Sometimes it takes one match to reduce them all to ashes! (1Cor. 3:12,13) Do we truly know whether, what we have built, is of gold, silver or of wood, hay, stubble or paper? Why must we wait for God’s match to see and know?

Another typical example of this problem of our natural soul, its imagination and reasoning power is the following. Let us add to these “virtues” of our natural soul feelings – EMOTIONS. Also, consider the personal “weight” where OUR SOUL HAD FORMED JESUS CHRIST INTO “OUR IMAGE”! We find throughout the New Testament many passages of the Word where we can clearly see that “God is love”, (1Jn. 4:8) He is compassionate, forgiving, merciful, patient, faithful, good, gentle, meek, lowly in heart. (Mt. 11:29) It is a very soothing,

sweet and comfortable truth to our natural soul and we thus always expect to experience this truth in all of our natural, earthly life. Hence, our soul does not search for any deeper truth. Is there more to it?

How about the Word where we can equally clearly see that our **“God is a consuming fire”**? (Heb. 12:29) Or that God’s Judgment can terminate our earthly life (Acts 5:1-10) or even our eternal life, if we walk and live like fools and refuse to overcome? (Rev. 3:5; 21:7) How does THIS TRUTH apply to our Christian life? Will our natural soul believe and trust also these passages of the Word of God? Will not our natural soul believe and say that these Words of God are only for pagans? So, will our natural soul start fearing God, His Ways and Judgments? **NO**, it will not, it cannot! It needs to go through God’s consuming FIRE to change its course and beliefs!

Let us realize and even draw from our past experiences that every natural soul is quite able to create its own image of God based also on various events in its life, living conditions and circumstances. Any serious event in our life is usually interpreted and understood not by God’s Word and reality, but according to our own natural character, feelings and understanding of those events and circumstances.

This understanding and interpretation of our natural soul then form OUR JUDGMENT OF THE PERSON OF GOD AND HIS WAYS which is always FALSE! But our image of God and our judgment of Him thus formed may redirect our life to a completely different road and may not change even after many years. The result may be a huge loss of time and blessings just because we did not search His True Character and ways from His Word. We will return to this topic later on when we will talk about LOVE.

Let us take another example. Preachers often quote **Jn. 3:16** as it were a “pivotal verse” from the whole Bible because it shows the great love of God. Well, it does show His great love! Does it also show the whole Character of God and the whole Truth about Him? NO!

The natural soul takes all those soothing facts and creates its own image of God, of His Ways, Judgments and of His Righteousness, what is of Him and what is not, what is His truth and what is not, what His Word truly means and what His Word cannot mean. Yet, the Scripture can challenge our natural soul and prove it wrong every time. But first He must destroy the pride in that soul.

Let us now take that natural soul with its “own image of God” and bring it to other passages of the Word of God and see how it fares there. In **Jn. 3:16** God so loved the world; in **Jam. 4:4** you are the enemy of God, if you love the same world! And in **Gen. 6:6,7**, right at the beginning of the world, GOD DESTROYED THE WORLD THAT HE LOVED SO MUCH and drowned all mankind as rats! How is your image of God now? Can your natural soul reconcile **Jn. 3:16** with **Gen. 6:6,7** or with **Jam. 4:4**? Can it now understand the Love of God, His Grace, Mercy and His true Character better? NO!

Furthermore, that same Jesus Christ, Who is merciful, compassionate, forgiving, loving, meek and lowly in heart commands king Saul TO KILL EVERY MAN, WOMAN, INFANT AND SUCKLING of the Amalekites! (**1Sam. 15:3**) What will your natural soul say or think now? Oh, this can't be Jesus! OH YES, IT IS HIM! This same Son of God in His pre-Bethlehem existence commanded Joshua (**Deut. 7:2,3**) to UTTERLY DESTROY MEN, WOMEN AND CHILDREN of all the nations named in **Deut. 7:1**! Jesus Himself said that “...**he** (Moses) **WROTE OF ME**”! (**Jn. 5:46**; Moses wrote the Book of Deuteronomy and thus wrote about Jesus Christ!) Jesus Christ also declared that “*things in Psalms and Prophets concerned Himself*”! (**Lk. 24:44**)

But Moses, David and the Prophets did not write about a “*terrible, unmerciful and unloving God*”. True? Can we absorb this truth or comprehend it in our natural mind and heart? NO, never!

We surely cannot comprehend that God became Man and had to learn obedience to men whom He created! (**Is. 45:12**) Can we fathom that? NO! Why would God learn obedience? (**Heb. 5:8**) Jesus Christ, being God, (**Jn. 14:9// 1Jn.**

5:7// Jn. 1:1) never had to obey anything and anyone. But without obedience Jesus, the Man, could not save us, conquer and destroy man's disobedience and thus become the Author of eternal Salvation unto all them that... well, again... OBEY HIM! (**Heb. 5:9// Rom. 5:19**) Therefore...

THE KEY WORD OF OUR SALVATION IS ALSO
OBEEDIENCE AND NOT FAITH ALONE!

YOU MAY KNOW THE BIBLE FROM COVER TO COVER AND AGREE
WITH IT ALL AND BELIEVE IT ALL AND BE LOST...
IF YOU DO NOT OBEY IT!

And there is much more to this mystery of obedience than meets the eye and we will return to it and ponder it later on.

If you should say that those peoples in **Deut. 7:1** were pagan nations, then let us understand that they were the same living human beings created by God as were the children of Israel. Simply said, **HOW CAN A LOVING GOD COMMAND SOMEONE TO KILL SMALL INNOCENT CHILDREN?** Herod, yes (**Mt. 2:16**), but God? Is this quite acceptable to your natural heart and mind?... or to your feelings or reasoning?... or to your sense of justice, righteousness, mercy, love, goodness, meekness, temperance? REALLY? If you are honest, then you must say: NO!

Furthermore, they did not have to be exterminated just because they were pagans. God was not sentencing people to be killed just because they were pagans, but because they became active enemies of God and of His people Israel by disregarding and opposing His Will in His choice of Israel. When they touched Israel, they touched the "apple of His eye". (**Zech. 2:8**) The question is: Did God sentence His own people also to be killed? YES, HE DID! And for the same reason, when they disregarded, opposed, resisted His Judgments, His Choice, His Government! They had the right to oppose Him by their free will, and God had the right to terminate their earthly life because HE gave that life to them, they did not own it, HE held their soul in life! (**Ps. 66:9**)

Let us now see one typical example from the chosen nation of Israel. It is written that the city of Jericho and all that was in it was accursed to the LORD except Rahab, the harlot, and all that were with her. God clearly commanded Israel to keep away from the accursed things lest they become accursed themselves. (**Jos. 6:17,18**) But Achan took the accursed things and hid them in his tent and the anger of the Lord was kindled against the children of Israel (**Jos. 7:1**)... not only against Achan himself, but against the whole nation! It cost Israel the lives of 36 innocent men (**Jos. 7:5**) and Achan (the son of Abraham, the son of Isaac, the son of Jacob ... the son of Carmi) with all his sons and daughters and oxen and asses and sheep and his tent and all that he had, was destroyed! He and all his family were stoned with stones and then they were all BURNT WITH FIRE! (**Jos. 7:24,25**) This would not be considered a righteous judgment in our days, would it? Well, the loving, merciful, good and righteous God did it! Do we understand it? NO!

What's more, let us SEE and comprehend that Achan was not even given any chances to repent and not repeat such sin! God never told him: *"I love you, you are My people, so, please, do not commit that again; confess your sin and I will forgive you and cleanse you from all unrighteousness"*. (**1Jn. 1:9**) Why did God not speak to him like that and in His Grace and Mercy give him a chance to repent? And why his whole family had to be killed? Did they participate in his sin? Were they judged so severely because it took place in the Old Testament? REALLY? God did exactly the same thing right at the beginning of the New Testament with Ananias and his wife Sapphira (**Acts 5:1-10**) who dropped dead without any appeals from God to confess their sin, repent and be forgiven and cleansed from their unrighteousness! Is that true? I must repeat it: IS THAT TRUE? Do we understand it? NO!

What is your natural sense now? What is your reasoning, understanding and your righteousness? What is your judgment? Do we truly know the Lord as the Scripture says? NO! Our own natural thoughts, imaginations, reasoning and understanding are all FALSE! Natural believers

have the same clue about the true Character of God the Father, God the Son and God the Holy Spirit as clay has about the potter! ALL THREE PERSONS OF THE GODHEAD ARE ONE. THEY WERE NEVER DIVIDED INTO A "TERRIBLE" GOD OF THE OLD TESTAMENT AND A "MERCIFUL" GOD OF THE NEW TESTAMENT! THEY DO NOT CHANGE FROM THE OLD TO THE NEW TESTAMENT! (1Jn. 5:7// Heb. 13:8// Mal. 3:6) Our natural soul may keep speculating and striving to understand, but in the eyes of God our natural soul knows nothing, understands nothing and it is nothing! Why? Because...

"if a man think HIMSELF to be something, when HE IS NOTHING, he deceives HIMSELF." (Gal. 6:3)

This is assuredly not a pleasant Word for our PROUD SOUL; hence, it is NEVER PREACHED AND EXPLAINED to believers in truth as the Spirit means it! Why not? Well, ask the preachers.

God has never changed! His Love, Patience, Compassion, Mercy, His Character, Nature, Holiness, Righteousness and Truth have never changed. **BUT** in the New Testament, God introduced NEW Commandments for believers, NEW ways to live, walk and behave; much higher and greater Commandments and ways, SPIRITUAL Commandments and SPIRITUAL ways. (Mt. 5:21,22,27,28, 31-34,38,39,43,44) While some of the Old Testament Commandments could be kept by a zealous and desirous natural soul, the New Testament ones CANNOT BE KEPT BY ANY NATURAL SOUL! It takes the Nature-Character of Christ to keep the New Testament Commandments and walk the New Testament ways! God brought us FROM THE NATURAL (physical, mental) REALM OF THE OLD TESTAMENT TO THE SPIRITUAL REALM OF THE NEW TESTAMENT. The "New" Ways, Commandments and Judgments of the New Testament express this fact... and we seem to understand nothing of it.

Furthermore, you cannot say that in the New Testament God never sentences His people to death. God has been allowing His people to be killed also in the New Testament... by the millions!... and not only Jews or those that lied to His Spirit, like Ananias and Sapphira, but also those

that had done His Will and faithfully kept His Testimony! (Rev. 6:9-11) Is this also logical, quite understandable and acceptable to our human soul? Is it acceptable to our sense of justice and righteousness? IS IT REALLY? NO!

The example of Ananias and Sapphira is clear as to their sin, but it is not clear why God, again, did not give them any chance to repent and be forgiven. God sentenced them to death right at the beginning of the New Testament to show that He, as God, had not changed, His Ways and Judgments had not changed. His Love, Grace and Mercy had not changed, except that natural souls, despite their studies, cannot SEE and understand any of it! Therefore, they preach His Word according to their understanding and deep desire for God's "unlimited and unconditional love, grace, mercy and forgiveness..." which would give believers an extra large measure of irresponsibility and comfort and freedom to do as they please... never mind God's True Purpose, His Will and pleasure and desire.

Let us take another example, this time with the disciple of the Lord, who lived in the Presence of the Son of God for over three years – Judas Iscariot! Would our natural, human soul understand his case? NO, never!

Read **Jn. 13:21-27** and tell me what you see in it. Do you see there an "unconditional love of the Lord for His own Disciple"? **NO!** Why not? The Lord did not tell him "Now, Judas, do not do what you are plotting to do, but change your thoughts, change your mind and repent of your intention, and I will forgive you and cleanse you from all unrighteousness". ON THE CONTRARY, the Lord gave him a sop after dipping it and then He told him:

"What you are about to do (by your own will), DO IT QUICKLY"! (Jn. 13:26,27)

Here the Lord commanded Judas saying to him, in effect: GO AND BETRAY ME QUICKLY... DO YOUR OWN WILL AND INTENTION OF YOUR HEART. And then He could have prophesied to him saying... AND THEN YOU WILL GO AND HANG YOURSELF AND BE DAMNED FOR EVER! (Mt. 18:7// Lk. 17:1)

Jesus knew what Judas would do (**Jn. 6:64**) and so He permitted him to do it, even told him to do it QUICKLY without one word of stopping him in his way and intention! Does our natural soul understand this truth of the Scripture? **NO!** And do not tell me that Judas was later saved. Oh, no! He LOST HIS SALVATION because after he had received the sop from the Lord's hand, Satan entered into him (**Jn. 13:27**) and he became the son of perdition. (**Jn. 17:12**)

Let us SEE and realize that Judas had the same opportunities as the other eleven Disciples. He was not excluded from anything that the other eleven were exposed to, but all was made open and available to him in the same way and measure. The Lord made no difference between Judas and the others. This is truly a FRIGHTENING REALITY showing us that a believer may "sit in his church", be exposed to all the light and truth as the whole congregation is and end up as Judas! Why? Judas refused to deny himself, his ideas, thoughts and convictions, his understanding of Jesus and of His mission and to be an Overcomer; and that despite walking with the living Son of God for over three years! He thus opened his spirit for Satan to return and RECLAIM HIM. (see also **Jn. 6:70,71**)

IF WE DO NOT GO WITH THE LORD, WE GO WITH SATAN. THE LORD TOOK HIS SPIRIT FROM JUDAS AND CAST HIM AWAY FROM HIS PRESENCE. (**Ps. 51:11**) This took place at the very end of the Old Testament and just few hours away from the New Testament!

When the Lord did not spare him, on what Scriptural basis would He spare those of like heart, mind and will, who also keep refusing to deny their self and overcome? Can you tell? (**2Pet. 2:4-10**) They will also be cut off and damned, if they abide in unbelief! (**Rom. 11:20-23// Jn. 15:6// Rev. 3:5; 21:8**) Our humanistic soul cannot receive and believe such a "terrible truth" about God, His Justice, Righteousness and Judgments. Most believers cannot believe this truth because they do not know God and His Holiness, they do not fear Him and they have no true reverence toward Him! But

spiritual reality with God is something far more and far deeper than our human sincerity, zeal, earnest desires, honesty, noble intentions or works. The decisive factor is our faith, fruits of the Spirit and obedience to the Word of God, to what GOD says and not to what we think! The same severe testing is coming to us now at the end of this Dispensation and the beginning of the Tribulation with its unspeakable sufferings and the **FIRE** of God's Judgments on the world and also on the Church – the House of God which shall be judged first. (1Pet. 4:17,18)

We may ask reverently where was the “unconditional” Love of God, His Grace, His Mercy and His ***“longsuffering to us-ward, not willing that ANY should perish, but that ALL should come to repentance”***? (2Pet. 3:9b) Can our natural human soul and mind understand or reconcile this above Word of God with **Jn. 13:26,27**? **NO!** The fact is that we **MUST SEE IN SPIRIT** to understand this as Our Lord sees and understands it.

Let us also note that the Word in **2Pet. 3:9b** applies not only to pagans, as many believers and preachers may understand it, but also to BORN-AGAIN, BAPTIZED BELIEVERS, WHO REFUSE TO REPENT AND CHANGE THEIR WAYS AS COMMANDED BY THE LORD! (**Rev. 2:5,16,21; 3:3,19**) Let us see, understand and believe that there may be many Iscairiots in the Church today. The same goes for the New Testament Pharisees, Sadducees and also various “scribes” who may already be condemned to hell now (**Mt. 23:1-33-39**) and they may equally be unaware of their tragedy as the Old Testament ones were not aware. Unless Our Lord destroys our **PRIDE**, we have no chances!

Brother Hanola did not write the Word of God, he was only called to bring the Truth of the Word and bear witness of that Light before your eyes and hearts that you may SEE and believe It! I am doing my duty before the Lord; you are called by the Lord to do your duty before Him in prayerfully considering the above facts and truths because this is what the Lord desires at this time from all of us!

If I should now say: **“Thus says the Lord...”** would it make any difference to you? NO! Are you able to believe that the Lord speaks to you in this book? NO soulish believer can! Why? The Lord says that the children of Israel almost never believed their prophets, why should the children of God in the Church believe their prophets? But the Lord will never speak to your mind. Go on your knees before the Almighty God and go into your heart and conscience, if you know how to do it, and see and hear there whether the Lord is speaking to you or not. But the Lord is causing His true servants and prophets to speak His words also to those that will not listen to them, and to call on those that will not answer! (**Jer. 7:27**) Do you belong to such?

I believe that these examples should be very helpful for us to understand the natural soul, its abilities, or rather disabilities, and the associated dangers for any believer, who may keep his old natural soul for many years after his Redemption... even unto his death! And when such a believer teaches at a seminary or is put behind a pulpit and teaches, preaches and ministers, are not all his listeners in the same danger? We will be able to see and judge this when our soul is sufficiently renewed by the Spirit. Otherwise, we will not even see what the actual problem is. If we cannot SEE our own self as God sees it, we will never SEE and understand this TRAGEDY OF BELIEVERS.

So, our loving God can “kill us” or allow us to be killed, if He judges us worthy of death (**Deut. 32:39,41// Acts 5:1-10; 25:11**) whether we understand it or not, whether we approve of it or not, whether we believe it or not, whether we feel good or bad about it, whether we love God and His Judgments or hate Him and His Judgments. But for Him, our physical death is precious, (**Ps. 116:15**) it is not a tragedy, but our spiritual death is! He may sometimes prevent our spiritual death (for example, committing the sin unto death – **Mt. 12:32// 1Jn. 5:16**, or the like) by our premature physical death. He has the right to take away our life from us since we do not own it, He gave it to us.

SOULISH BELIEVERS

If we are able to SEE, understand and believe the abilities of our natural soul briefly described in the preceding section, we may now continue and describe typical abilities of soulish believers as we may also recognize them in our daily Christian lives.

Soulish believers trust and follow solely their natural soul as they have no other thing to trust and follow in their lives. Many may not be “conscious” even of their own consciousness which is a part of their spirit! They are definitely not aware of their intuition and communion, which are the other two parts of their spirit. Furthermore, their conscience may be filthy or evil and would not contribute to the renewal of their soul even if they were aware of their conscience and could “hear it”. (**Tit. 1:15// Heb. 10:22**)

If they have continued with their natural soul untouched by the Spirit for a long time, their soul has become religious and quite capable of leading them confidently in the wrong direction, on the wrong way! The longer you walk in the wrong direction, the longer your way back becomes, the harder and more impossible becomes your turning around on your way, which also means, your repentance. You keep walking on the broad way and are not seeking the narrow way. (**Mt. 7:13,14**) Why? Because your “traditional knowledge” in your natural and thus deceived soul tells you that the broad way is for pagans and that you, a born-again believer, is walking on the narrow way that “*leads to life eternal*” and not to death and destruction. It also tells you that the Spirit is “*guiding you into all truth*” (**Jn. 16:13**), so, you do not need anyone to tell you anything. Is this TRUE? Well, it is very logical to interpret these facts declared in the Scripture along your reasoning; yet, your reasoning based on your “traditional knowledge” may be completely FALSE!

It is true that there is the narrow way that “*leads to life eternal*” and that the Spirit came to “*guide us into all truth*”. The first fact was spoken by the Lord to the multitudes (**Mt.**

5:1,2) and the second fact was spoken to His Disciples only. (Jn. 13:35; 16:17) But what fruit do you have in your life to prove these facts? You are able to believe these two doctrines and that you live them even when your life may bring fruit which could be completely contrary to them! You may be divorced from your Christian spouse or living separately based solely on selfishness, stubbornness, pride, religious convictions or other spirits of flesh rather than on fornication. (Mt. 19:9) Your family may be “destroyed”, your sons or daughters may be alcoholics, drug addicts or lazy, without jobs, living a worldly life, be unbelievers or the same soulish believers as you are. What kind of fruit is that? It shows that your life does not follow the two doctrines and your belief is false. The fact that some sons “follow” their fathers in becoming pastors and preachers is also no proof that they walk on the narrow way or are led by the Spirit. Why?

The Spirit will FIRST guide you to YOUR OWN CROSS (Mt. 16:24) as this is the only way to your future eternal Life, the only way to learn and be able to FOLLOW THE LORD on the narrow way. This means that the Spirit will guide you in your everyday life into situations where you will have plentiful opportunities to learn to DENY YOURSELF, NOT TO DEFEND YOURSELF AND TO CRUCIFY YOUR FLESH ON YOUR CROSS.

The Spirit will first guide you, teach, direct and instruct you through some one else, who is not proud, but already spiritual, meek, pliable, teachable with spiritual authority and who already has the fruit of God’s Spirit. (Ps. 25:9// Gal. 5: 22,23) And when you have been thus tried as gold is tried in the fire, (Job 23:10// Jam. 1:12// Rev. 3:18a) THEN will the Spirit call you to minister Christ to others, not before. If you are ordained before such transformation, just because you passed some exams in a seminary, then it was not the Lord, Who ordained you and you are not His minister in His books.

TRUE MINISTRY IS NOT A MATTER OF GIVING BIBLICAL ADDRESSES OR INFORMATION FROM THE BIBLE OR ABOUT JESUS CHRIST WITH THEIR LOGICAL EXPLANATIONS AND PROOFS.
--

TRUE MINISTRY IS **OUR TESTIMONY** OF WHAT THE SPIRIT OF GOD AND HIS WORD HAS PRODUCED IN OUR OWN LIFE, HOW THE FRUIT OF HIS WORK SHOWS IN OUR LIFE AND IN OUR OWN TRANSFORMATION SO THAT OTHERS COULD SEE IT AND FOLLOW IT!

IF WE DO NOT LIVE THE LIFE OF CHRIST IN OUR SOUL, WE HAVE NO TESTIMONY AND NO MINISTRY!

A DOCTRINE, KNOWLEDGE OR WISDOM OR ANY LIGHT WE MAY HAVE, IS **NOT** THE TESTIMONY OF JESUS CHRIST! MANY BELIEVERS HAVE IT, EVEN A LOT OF IT; YET, THEY MAY BE SPIRITUALLY DEAD AND HAVE NO LIFE OF CHRIST IN THEIR SOUL!

THE LIFE OF CHRIST **IS** THE LIGHT OF MEN (**Jn. 1:4**), BUT NOT VICE-VERSA, THE LIGHT IS **NOT** THE LIFE OF CHRIST NEITHER CAN IT PRODUCE THAT LIFE!

Soulish believers also believe and preach that because the *“Lord has done it all for them, they do not have to do anything; they only have to believe that all was accomplished in Christ”*. Their sincere belief and doctrine is: *“Once saved, forever saved”* no matter what they do or don't do. They are victims of this very deep and devilish deception since these doctrines come straight from the Great Deceiver and are absolutely contrary to the Word of God! The Lord desires that we expose those doctrines in the Light of the Scripture and then SEE what the natural human soul is truly capable of doing, believing and preaching.

Have you ever been aware in your soul that after your baptism you were “seeking the narrow way”? Truthfully? If you were not aware of that, then you were never seeking the narrow way. And if you were never seeking the narrow way, then you could not find it. The Lord says that ***“FEW there be that FIND IT”***.

The Lord was once asked whether there be few that are saved. (**Lk. 13:23**) The Lord did not reply directly, rather, He admonished them saying:

“STRIVE to enter in at the straight gate; for MANY, I say unto you, WILL SEEK TO ENTER IN AND SHALL NOT BE ABLE.” (Lk. 13:24)

Firstly, the Lord had never said *“Do nothing just believe, for I have done everything for you”*. NO! He clearly says: **“STRIVE”** So, if you do not strive you cannot keep His Commandments! But for us, they are not options which we may safely ignore. If you do not keep His Commandments you do not love the Lord, but yourself, and He will not love you either! (**Jn. 14:21**) And you may only guess what will happen to you when you will “try” to enter the Kingdom. Those leaders that never warned you will not help you one bit at that time because they will not be entering in either. (**Mt. 23:13**)

Secondly, why will these believers be unable to enter in at the straight gate and walk on the narrow way? Because they had walked on the broad way for too many years in a false conviction or false hope or being misled by their leaders and no one warned them. Soulsh believers are deceived about the broad way because they do not understand what that “destruction” truly means! When we sow unwillingness (to ask, seek, knock), we will later reap inability and that, much more than we sowed. (**Gal. 6:7**)

So, a born-again believer baptized in water may be walking on the broad way to “destruction” and nobody tells him, especially, if his pastor and brethren are also soulsh and walking on the same broad way with him. Is this logical? No, but in Spirit IT IS TRUE. No soulsh believer is able to SEE this fact and thus believe it. Though Apostle Paul in his first letter to the church in Corinth teaches and clearly distinguishes the spiritual believers from the soulsh–carnal believers, yet not one believer would ever voluntarily admit that he/she may be a soulsh one! True? Why?

A spiritually blind man cannot see his own blindness as it is not a natural or physical blindness, but supernatural blindness imposed by the god of this world! (**2Cor. 4:4**) This Word of God applies firstly to pagans as to their need of a Saviour and of His Salvation. BUT it also applies to the carnal believers as to their need to SEE and understand what they were saved from and what they were saved into; what

their Salvation really is and how to work it out with God. Hence, the mind of such believers is also blinded by the same god of this world, and in this sense, their mind is like unto the mind of pagans.

What we should be able to see even with our physical eyes is some peculiar behavior of soulish believers. Let us consider four typical examples of soulish believers, who live in their world of...

a) ...reason. They must dissect, analyze and reason out everything with their own understanding, with convictions of their mind and beliefs based on their own logic, on long standing standards in teaching, on their “traditional knowledge” received from some other teachers, preachers, theology professors, biblical historians or others, who in turn received their knowledge from their predecessors, and so on, and so on.

Such “traditional knowledge” may have been flawed from its beginning, never verified with the Spirit, the Author of the Word of God, and thus it may have remained greatly flawed with truths mixed in with deceptions and lies. Whenever we transmit knowledge, we also transmit all errors with it. They always need plausible explanations for every declaration of truth or faith as they are unable to believe anything that is not justified by their own reasons and logic.

b) ...action. For such believers, it is always go-go-go, do-do-do, the more you do the better. They are unable to sit down and do nothing for a few hours, absolutely nothing; they might feel they are sinning against the Lord “*not redeeming the time because the days are evil.*” (**Eph. 5:16**) Their engine is the anxiety of their soul. Also, newly born believers may be sent to the missionary field or asked to help their pastor or their church in some religious activity which should “prove” that they are born-again and thus working for the Lord right from the beginning. But newly born believers are not called by the Lord to do anything until they sufficiently mature. The same is with our children, who are not called to work or help their parents immediately after they are born, but must sufficiently mature. True?

c) ...undecidedness. The natural will is not free or able to make spiritually correct or timely decisions. It usually goes along with stubbornness of the darkened mind which refuses to admit anything or seek Truth. The natural will may be a very strong will and there are no clear or easy ways to soften it or change it. And if it does decide to do something, accept some counsel, it usually fails to carry it out. Such “decisions” may be called “New Year’s resolutions”; they never come true. The natural will also likes to procrastinate as it is quite often unsure of anything and keeps the person in a state of “eternal insecurity”. What often comes to the picture are also fears; fear of everything or anything, usually unjustified. But fears make believers undecided as well, since they may even fear to make a decision and take responsibility. Also, passivity of believers as to their decisions or actions in the area of their overcoming, working out their own Salvation and spiritual progress may result in incalculable losses and even tragedies. All the choices and decisions of the natural will are selfish and do not consider others.

d) ...emotions. One hour believers may be joyful and jumping and praising the Lord, tears flowing down their cheeks. The next hour they may be depressed, fearful, sad, doubtful, complaining and sighing. Any bit of unpleasant truth, “naked” truth, bitter truth would offend them, prick them or throw them into despair and turmoil. There is no sign of walking in the Spirit or living by faith. I have experienced this with very many believers especially during my years in my former Pentecostal church.

There are different kinds of soulish believers: undependable, lazy, irresponsible, foolish, unfaithful, etc. There are also soulish believers, which are honest, dependable, sincere, devout, diligent, faithful, responsible, etc. The problem with very many believers is that when they see such an honest, dependable, sincere, devout, diligent, faithful or responsible believer that is soulish–carnal, they may see nothing wrong with him. Yet, he is NOT acceptable to God in that natural state. Our Heavenly Father demands from us much more than our “good soulish virtues” through which

we “try to work for God, communicate with Him and please Him.” It is clear from the Word of God that...

SOULISH BELIEVERS ARE NOT ACCEPTABLE TO GOD IN THEIR NATURAL, UNRENEWED SOUL THOUGH THEY WERE REDEEMED BY THE BLOOD OF HIS SON JESUS CHRIST!

THERE IS NOTHING IN US OR OF US AT OUR REDEMPTION THAT IS ACCEPTABLE TO GOD, THAT HE COULD OR WOULD FELLOWSHIP WITH OR LOVE! ALL OUR FLESH MUST DIE; WE MUST DIE AND BE RECREATED BY GOD’S SPIRIT IN OUR ENTIRETY – SPIRIT, SOUL AND BODY. ONLY THIS NEW CREATION – NEW MAN – WILL BE ACCEPTABLE TO GOD, USED BY HIM AND LOVED BY HIM THROUGHOUT ETERNITY. GOD WILL NEVER ALLOW ANY PART OF OUR FLESH TO DWELL WITH HIM OR GLORY IN HIS PRESENCE. (1Cor. 1:29)

At this point, the Lord desires to show us one of the deepest and most dangerous deceptions with which believers are deceived. It greatly affects our beliefs, the course of our actions or inactions and all our earthly life. It also makes us unable to receive from Him what we need and what He desires to give us and prosper us in spirit, soul and body. Let us, therefore, SEE the following.

WHEN WE ARE DELIVERED FROM WHAT WE SEE AND BELIEVE TO BE OUR “BAD-EVIL-SINFUL FLESH”, WE ARE SATISFIED AND BELIEVE THAT WE ARE NOW “GOOD AND ACCEPTABLE TO THE LORD”. WHY? WE SEE NOTHING ELSE WRONG WITH US; NO MORE “BAD-EVIL-SINFUL FLESH”. BUT OUR SAVIOR AND LORD SAYS THAT OUR “GOOD FLESH”, GOOD VIRTUES OF OUR NATURAL SOUL ARE ALSO EVIL AND SINFUL AND WERE NOT SPARED ON HIS CROSS!

OUR NATURAL “GOOD” SOUL WAS NOT SPARED IN ITS NATURAL LIFE! HENCE, ALL – **BAD & GOOD** – MUST BE DESTROYED IN ITS ENTIRETY; OTHERWISE, WE CANNOT LIVE BY FAITH OR MINISTER IN SPIRIT WHILE WE LIVE IN OUR “GOOD, HUMANLY ACCEPTABLE FLESH”! THERE IS NOTHING THAT GOD HAD SAVED AND KEPT ALIVE FROM OUR OLD BEING.

WHEN YOUR SINS ARE FORGIVEN, YOU ARE RECONCILED TO GOD. BUT IF YOUR FLESH – SINFUL NATURE – IS NOT DESTROYED IN ITS ENTIRETY, YOU WILL KEEP SINNING AND RETAINING EVIL WITHIN YOURSELF FOR EVER WHILE BEING A SINCERE, HONEST, DILIGENT, FAITHFUL, DEVOUT, DEPENDABLE AND RESPONSIBLE BELIEVER! DO YOU SEE THIS TRUTH? IT SHOULD CHANGE YOUR FAITH AND YOUR CHRISTIAN LIFE. @@

Paul said: “***I AM crucified with Christ...***” which means: “***I AM FINISHED...***” not just my sins. But if “I AM crucified”, if I take up my cross and deny the life of my old natural soul, then it is no more I, my old self, that lives, but Christ lives His Eternal Life IN MY NEW SPIRITUAL SOUL and not only in my spirit! (**Gal. 2:20**) In such a case, I am a fully completed spiritual believer, matured son of God, ready to follow the Lord wheresoever He goes (**Mt. 16:24, 25 // Rev. 14:4,5**), ready to be taken to the Throne and meet My Lord and My Father. (**Rev. 12:5**)

The problem in recognizing a soulish believer from a spiritual one is far more complicated than just observing their outward acts and behavior as per the four examples given above. Our natural soul has its own DISPOSITION which may vary vastly from individual to individual. Our disposition may also be viewed as a “personal package” containing the type of thinking, personal talents, personal inclinations or leanings, desires, goals, good and bad virtues (mentioned before) and the “package” of spirits of darkness and evil. These spirits typically include some form of pride, some degree of jealousy, stubbornness, selfishness, self-righteousness, fears, hypocrisy, malevolency, foolishness, laziness, disobedience, possibly bitterness, hatred, etc.

Hence, each of the four examples of soulish believers on pages 48 and 49 is further affected by these “packages”. We may then have a soulish believer, who lives in his world of “reason” and may be either fearful or jealous or stubborn or naturally humble, proud, self-righteous, bitter or a hypocrite depending on his/her disposition. The same goes for the other three examples of soulish believers.

The most diligent, faithful, zealous and devout soulish believer may be either proud or humble or fearful or he may be a hypocrite, etc. The combinations within the disposition of each natural soul are almost endless. It is usually possible to discern the main features of a human soul and its overall temperament, but only after some time of having personal contact with the person. Many of its other features will remain well hidden. Only the Lord knows about them and He may expose them in His timing in order that they might be destroyed and the soul delivered.

These well hidden features harbored within the natural soul are its "bad virtues and bad spirits". They may never be discovered by another natural soul and they may not be known even to the infected soulish believer himself.

So, what does the Lord do with our natural, carnal soul? How does He deal with it? How is He transforming our natural soul making it spiritual, perfect and thus fully acceptable to Himself and to Our Father? Well, He is doing it graciously, wisely, patiently and consistently whether our response to it is right or wrong, whether we like it or not, whether we understand it or not.

OUR LORD DOES HIS WORK BY HIS LIVING AND SHARP WORD, (**Heb. 4:12// Rev. 1:16**) BY DISCIPLINE, CHASTISEMENT, REBUKE, (**Heb. 12:5-8**) BY GUIDANCE OF HIS SPIRIT, BY SHOWING US OUR SPIRITUAL NEED AND THE TRUTH ABOUT OURSELVES (here a little and there a little – **Jn. 16:13// Is. 28:10**). HE ALSO WORKS IN OUR SOUL SO THAT WE WOULD BE WILLING TO DO HIS WILL. (**Phil. 2:13**) WHEN WE FOLLOW HIS GUIDANCE AND DO HIS WILL, HE DELIVERS US, MEETS OUR NEEDS AND ALSO COMFORTS US DURING THIS WHOLE PROCESS.

WE MUST DEFINITELY SEE AND UNDERSTAND THAT ALL OF THESE ABOVE STEPS ARE FIRSTLY DONE BY THE SPIRIT THROUGH A MAN, WHO IS NEVER AS PERFECT AS WE EXPECT, BUT WHO WAS SOVEREIGNLY CHOSEN BY GOD FOR US WHETHER WE LIKE HIM OR NOT. GOD DOES NOT WORK IN US DIRECTLY UNTIL WE ARE SUFFICIENTLY MATURE IN SPIRIT AND SOUL AND DO NOT NEED TUTORS ANY MORE. (**Gal. 4:1,2**)

His Spirit always knows the right timing for any spiritual work that is to be done in us, the manner in which it is to be done and the person(s) that He will use. He then leads the person to express his discernment, his observation, his faith about our spiritual need, our condition, our deeds, faults or errors as our fruit would clearly indicate. His discernment is always supported by the Word of God and, if necessary, by two or three other witnesses in whose mouth every word of that chosen person is established. (Mt. 18:16)

This process is never pleasant or joyful, that is why we are never eager to be treated like that without first being offended and pricked and defending ourselves, disregarding the truth and disbelieving such "shameful accusations". When we finally, under the weight of the evidence, break down and repent, we always need the comforting of the Spirit. So, the Spirit is our Comforter not only because of what injustices and bruises and pain we can suffer from the world and hell, but also because of what war we have to wage within our own soul. (Jn. 14:26) Many times the Spirit may show us that instead of fighting and resisting the devil we have been fighting and resisting the Lord Himself!

We should not be surprised to learn that the Word of God is kind, compassionate, loving, intreating, full of grace, mercy and forgiveness. This may be more so during our Redemption and ensuing spiritual baby stage where the Lord requires from us nothing but that we would eat, sleep and play. But when our childish days are over and we are supposed to be "weaned from the milk and drawn from the breasts" of our tutors, our higher spiritual education and transformation should then begin. (Is. 28:9,10// Gal. 4:1,2)

YET, very few children are ever weaned from the milk (of the Word) and drawn from the breasts of their pastors, teachers or elders. Why? Well, we may not know how or even when to wean our spiritual children from the milk of the Word. We may fear to grant them freedom to broaden their faith and depth of spiritual knowledge, which freedom we may not have ourselves. And if we have not matured in

spirit ourselves, then we have nothing else to offer, but milk. How then can we wean anyone else from milk?

Yet there are believers that do go on unto perfection (**Heb. 6:1**) and do not continue on the merry-go-round of their religious kindergarten. They heed the call of the Lord and they are not afraid to step out of their boat and learn to walk on the water, which represents living and walking by faith. (**Mt. 14:28,29// Rom. 1:17// Gal. 3:11// Heb. 10:38**) What is the Word of God to such believers? If believers have any desire to truly know the Lord, His Character and be thereby changed into His Image, to follow Him and not their own self, then to such believers...

THE WORD OF GOD IS **QUICKENING, POWERFUL, AND SHARPER** THAN ANY TWO-EDGED SWORD, **PIERCING...**
(**Heb. 4:12a// Rev. 1:16**)

Believers are not used to that kind of the Word, nor do they desire it, nor yet are they ready or able to receive it and obey it without much delay or without “thinking about it”! That is the reason why they remain children drinking spiritual milk “for ever”. That includes those in the leadership of the organized Church that live in their religious souls and are “touched, pricked or offended” by any sharper word piercing something inside of their natural soul!

What is it that the Sharp and Powerful Word of God pierces? It pierces the **“dividing asunder of SOUL and SPIRIT** (*fleshly barrier between soul and spirit – our VEIL*) **and joints and marrow** (*natural life is in blood, created in marrow*), **and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart** (*not of the mind*).” (**Heb. 4:12b**) First, the Lord “knocks” on your heart, which means: He calls your SOUL from your SPIRIT. (**Rev. 3:20**)

IF YOU BORN-AGAIN BAPTIZED BELIEVER IN HIS CHURCH (of the Laodiceans or Lutherans or Baptists or Pentecostals or Catholics or Calvins, etc.) **HEAR HIS VOICE AND OPEN THE DOOR TO HIM** (to your heart and soul), **HE WILL COME INTO**

YOUR SOUL and will sup with you and you with Him. Only then will you begin to have a fellowship with Christ Jesus and a chance to begin to know Him.

And, PLEASE, do not tell me that the Lord knocks on the heart of pagans. The Lord writes this to His own Church of Laodiceans, not to unbelievers! This Word should never be used for evangelistic purposes. It is BORN-AGAIN BELIEVERS, WHO HAVE HEARTS CLOSED TO THE LORD, who need their SAVIOUR to enter their SOUL and become also their LORD and replace their SELF which has been their “true lord” all their previous life!

“He that has an ear (among those that read this), let him hear what the Spirit says unto the churches.” (Rev. 3:22)

BUT, how many believers hear His voice? And how many are willing to open their heart to the Lord even though they may hear His voice? If they refuse to open their heart, the Lord sends His Word... piercing that barrier. Have you heard His Word that pierced your soul and spirit? Was it painful? Did you obey that Word afterwards? Why must the Lord get into our heart and soul? Because otherwise HE CANNOT SAVE IT! Otherwise OUR SELF-WILL WINS AND NOT OUR LORD!

THE LORD DOES NOT HAVE TO FIGHT SATAN, HE HAD ALREADY DEFEATED HIM. HE HAS TO FIGHT <u>US</u> SINCE THE LORD HAD NOT DEFEATED US AND SUBDUED OUR WILL BECAUSE WE RESIST HIM! AND QUITE OFTEN WE MAY RESIST GOD MORE THAN WE RESIST SATAN! ARE WE AWARE OF THAT? NO!

Our Salvation is a gift from God, but we must willingly receive it into our spirit AND WORK IT OUT INTO OUR SOUL AS PER **Phil. 2:12b!** We will say more about this in the next section.

Soulsh believers commit some drastic errors in misinterpreting various parts of the Word of God. Their interpretation always follows their human, natural understanding which always suits their personal desires, their judgment, comfort, thinking, reasoning or feelings. Soulsh believers

are never inclined to assume from God any responsibility for their own Salvation. They deny the need for any works within their own soul and would like to spend all their time and efforts on their physical life or on other people.

The most basic error they commit is in interpreting the Word of God in **Eph. 2:8,9**:

“For by grace are you saved through faith; and that not of yourselves, it is the gift of God: not of works, lest any man should boast.”

That Word is true and correct and nothing in it is unclear. But the word “WORKS” is totally misinterpreted with respect to the rest of the Scripture! The core of this misinterpretation is in the KIND OF WORKS AND IN THE ORIGIN OF THE WORKS AND NOT IN THE TOTAL ABSENCE OF ALL WORKS! What is their error? Well, let us consider in our heart, mind and conscience the following picture from the Word of God.

WE CANNOT WORK **FOR** OUR REDEMPTION TO RECEIVE GOD’S SPIRIT (**Jn. 3:3**), HIS FORGIVENESS OF SINS AND RECONCILIATION TO HIMSELF (JUST AS WE CANNOT SPLIT THE RED SEA BY OUR EFFORTS!) THIS IS HIS FREE GIFT TO US AND IT IS “NOT OF WORKS” LEST ANY MAN SHOULD BOAST!

BUT THEN **WE MUST WORK OUT** OUR SALVATION IN OUR **SPIRIT** AND **SOUL** WITH FEAR AND TREMBLING ONCE WE ARE REDEEMED AND ARE RECONCILED TO GOD AND HAVE HIS SPIRIT DWELLING IN US! (**Phil. 2:12// 2Cor. 7:1**, etc.) ONCE THE RED SEA IS SPLIT, WE MUST CROSS IT ON OUR OWN FEET AND WITH OUR OWN DECISION, WHICH IS THE WORK OF OUR FAITH.

THE WORD OF GOD IN **Eph. 2:9** POINTS TO THE WORK OF MAN’S SINFUL FLESH, OF HIS NATURAL, CARNAL SOUL, OF HIS SELF. THIS “WORK” ALSO INCLUDES ANY WORK FOR THE LORD AND ALL THE SO CALLED “WORKS OF THE LAW”. (**Rom. 3:28**) IN BOTH CASES, IT IS THE WORK OF MAN’S SINFUL, NATURAL, CARNAL SOUL DESIRING TO BE “WORTHY OF HIS SALVATION”. BUT BY THIS WORK NO FLESH SHALL BE JUSTIFIED AND IT IS NOT ACCEPTABLE TO GOD IN ANY WAY. (**Gal. 2:16**)

BUT THE WORK IN Mt. 16:24,25// Acts 2:38// 2Cor. 6:17, 18; 7:1// Gal. 5:24// Eph. 4:15,22-24// Phil. 2:12// Heb.6:1-6, etc., IS OUR WORK OF THE FAITH RECEIVED FROM JESUS CHRIST AFTER OUR REDEMPTION! (1Cor. 12:9// Rom. 12:3// Heb. 12:2, etc.) THIS WORK IS ABSOLUTELY NECESSARY AND OUTRIGHT DEMANDED BY GOD FOR THE SALVATION OF OUR SPIRIT AND SOUL AFTER WE ARE REDEEMED!

OUR FULL SALVATION MUST INCLUDE THE PERFECTION OF OUR SPIRIT AND SOUL, WHICH IS THE CONTINUATION OF OUR REDEMPTION! WITHOUT THIS WORK WE CANNOT BE PERFECTED AS DESIRED BY OUR LORD.

THESE CONDITIONS OF GOD TOWARD BELIEVERS ARE CLEARLY DECLARED THROUGHOUT THE SCRIPTURE AND WITHOUT THESE WORKS OF FAITH WE CANNOT BE OVERCOMERS AND INHERIT ALL THINGS! WITHOUT THESE WORKS OF FAITH GOD CANNOT HAVE HIS SONS AND DAUGHTERS – HIS TRUE FAMILY – BECAUSE WE CANNOT BE IN ANY WAY CONFORMED INTO THE IMAGE OF CHRIST, WHICH IS THE TRUE AND FINAL PURPOSE OF GOD OUR FATHER FOR SAVING MAN. (Rom. 8:29)

He that is working out his own Salvation IS THE TRUE OVERCOMER and becomes a TRUE SON OF GOD. The Word of God does not say: *“He that believed on Me and is redeemed shall inherit all things...”* NO! It clearly says: **“HE (the redeemed believer) THAT OVERCOMES SHALL INHERIT ALL THINGS, AND I WILL BE HIS GOD AND HE SHALL BE MY SON.”** (REV. 21:7) Do we see that? Do we really?

Soulish, carnal, fleshly believers always want to have everything free, without any responsibility, without any action, any effort on their part whatsoever, just believe... and God will do everything for them. NO! They have to DO THE FAITH-LIGHT which Christ has showed them about themselves lest that faith remains dead and they remain dead to the Spirit. (Jam. 2:17,26) God had not created lazy, irresponsible, naïve, foolish and deceived human beings, the Devil did! But many believers seem to be very happy in their inaction, passivity and have no intention, no initiative to ever change their situation. Well, without their consent and their

conscious cooperation with God, He will not do for them what they may believe or hope for.

Let us see, believe, register and understand another Word of God which says to us clearly:

“What does it profit my brethren, though a man say he has faith and have not works? CAN FAITH SAVE HIM?... (NO!) Ye see then how that BY WORKS (of faith) IS A MAN JUSTIFIED AND NOT BY FAITH ONLY... For as BODY WITHOUT THE SPIRIT IS DEAD SO FAITH WITHOUT WORKS IS DEAD ALSO.” (Jam. 2:14,24,26)

THEREFORE, “For by grace are ye saved, through (LIVING) faith; and that (grace and faith are) not of YOURSELVES, it is the gift of God; not of works (of YOUR FLESH), lest any man should boast.” (Eph. 2:8,9)

The Redemption of man is indeed a free gift of God and no man can achieve it, enter into it by any works, which he may decide to do FOR the Lord or TOWARD his Salvation! But once we are redeemed and come into this free gift of God, then God demands that we cooperate with Him on our Salvation, that is, the perfection of our sinful, filthy spirit and soul (**Heb. 6:1,2// 2Cor. 7:1// Tit. 1:15**, etc.) and overcome it by denying our old soul life and taking up our cross and following Our Lord. (**Mt. 16:24// Jam. 2:24**) The Lord tied this Word to losing or gaining our soul! (**Mt. 16:25**) We are required to exercise our free will and unite it with the Will of Our Father! Our Salvation is definitely not a “free ride of dead faith”. It is a work of faith to follow the Lord unto OUR PERFECTION. WORKING OUT OUR SALVATION, GOING ON TO OUR PERFECTION IS OUR OVERCOMING! Unfortunately, only few believers are doing it during their earthly life.

Note that in the seven letters to His Church, the Lord gives promises ONLY TO “him that overcomes”. (**Rev. 2:7,11,17,26; 3:5,12,21**) To him that does not overcome, the Lord declared that He will blot out his name out of the Book of Life. THIS IS THE LOSS OF SALVATION! (**Rev. 3:5 and 20:15**) Or that he will be hurt by the second death. (**Rev. 2:11**)

There is a striking contrast and also a vast difference between the soulish and spiritual believers. Unfortunately, most of the true born-again believers are soulish and not spiritual; they are like unto spiritual “embryos” that never grow up. They possess the Eternal Life of God in their spirit, but they do not live His Life in their soul. They keep living their own natural life of flesh, which after their Redemption, becomes religious. That old life still governs their soul while God’s Life doesn’t govern their soul. They keep walking after their flesh and not after the Spirit though they are all doctrinally in Christ Jesus by the virtue of the rebirth in their spirit and by the desire of their Father. But they are not in Christ by their life or by their works of faith, neither livingly, nor experientially, hence, their life does not show it. That’s why they do not know Him, though they do not believe it.

Hence, the Word of God in **Rom. 8:1** is also very badly misinterpreted. It is true that there is now no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus, BUT after the words “*Christ Jesus*”, the statement does not end, rather, it continues declaring that it applies to those that “DO NOT WALK AFTER THE FLESH, BUT AFTER THE SPIRIT”. The soulish believers that KEEP WALKING AFTER THEIR FLESH are still potentially in danger of future condemnation... especially, if they are not doing it ignorantly. Why? The danger is in the fact that they may, in time, get “OUT OF CHRIST WHERE THE FATHER PUT THEM BY HIS WILL” and become condemned! Their decisions and will are at odds with the Decisions and Will of their Father! THIS IS ALSO THE LOSS OF SALVATION! And this is equally never preached and explained to the believers in the Church of Jesus Christ and they are not warned! Their leaders should read the Word in **Ez. 3:17-21** and understand that they were equally made watchmen unto the House of God, the Church, and this Word of God equally applies to them!

How can believers get out of Christ? The Lord says it with His own mouth: “***If a man ABIDE NOT IN ME (he gets out of Me), he is cast forth as a branch and is withered; and men gather them and cast them into THE FIRE, and they are burned.***” (Jn. 15:6) TRUE? Or not true? The

Lord is not talking about pagans, who could never be in Christ in order to get out of Him!

If a man – born-again believer – could not get out of Christ and break the seal of His Spirit by which he was sealed at his redemption (**Eph. 1:13**), if this was impossible (according to the soulish believers and preachers), then the Word of God in Jn. 15:6 could not possibly exist! The fact that soulish believers could not SEE this light and may have been blind for many years does not mean that they have to remain blind until they die. But if they insist in their pride that they see, then the LORD is giving to them another Word of His, which they may equally misinterpret or disbelieve. This Word says to them:

“And Jesus said: For judgment I am come into this world, that they which do not see might see; and that they which (insist that they) see might be made BLIND.” (Jn. 9:39) If they have a heart to understand this Word let them understand it.

Let us consider one other important example that touches born-again believers and the absolute need of their works of faith, of striving, going on unto perfection of their soul and spirit, lest they should enter the DANGER ZONE OF LOSING THEIR LIFE ETERNAL.

The Word of God in Heb. 6:1-3 tells us: ***“Therefore, leaving the principles of the doctrine of Christ, LET US GO ON UNTO PERFECTION, not laying again the foundation of repentance from DEAD WORKS and of FAITH toward God; of the doctrine of baptisms, and of laying on of hands, and of resurrection of the dead, and of eternal judgment. And this will we do, if God permits.”***

The above means that we – soul and spirit – are not perfect in our natural “as redeemed” state and thus not acceptable to God in that state! We must leave all the basics of our childish Christianity, not repeat them for ever, waste the precious time of our earthly lives and ignore the very Purpose and Command of Our God to be perfect. (**Mt. 5:48**)

Then the Word of God says that we will do it, IF GOD PERMITS. Why would God not permit such a desirable thing? He will not permit us to undertake the above journey toward our perfection, if we are not walking on the narrow way or if we would try to do it “ourselves” walking on the broad way. (Mt. 7:13) The Spirit must have sufficient access to our soul and build there the right foundations after the Lord is allowed to enter our heart. (Rev. 3:20) Otherwise, God would not engage His Spirit in this transformation work and permit us to “go on unto perfection”, deliverance, renewal, rebirth of our natural, carnal soul without having the necessary foundations and thus conditions in us for such a journey and work.

DELIVERANCE OF OUR SOUL FROM FLESH IS NOT ONLY VERY UNPLEASANT; IT IS A PAINFUL THING, SOMETIMES VERY PAINFUL THING CAUSING SUFFERING TO OUR SOUL. THAT IS THE PRINCIPAL REASON WHY BELIEVERS ARE NOT “INTERESTED IN THIS PROCESS”! (Heb. 12:11)

What then follows is a solemn warning of the Lord to all those believers, who do not heed His call in Heb. 6:1,2, resist the Spirit in His mission to transform them into His Own Image, refuse to cooperate with God and endure this painful process. To such, God will not permit to even start this process.

So, what is the warning to such believers? The Lord clearly declares that they are in the DANGER ZONE of FALLING AWAY... away from their faith, from their position in Him, from His Grace. How? By their continued resistance to be separated from their carnal soul and thus resisting to fulfill the Will of their Father. The Word of God concludes:

“For IT IS IMPOSSIBLE FOR THOSE... IF THEY SHALL FALL AWAY, TO RENEW THEM AGAIN UNTO REPENTANCE; seeing they crucify to themselves the Son of God afresh and put Him to an open shame.”
(Heb. 6:4a,6)

THIS IS THE LOSS OF SALVATION! If you fall away from the faith and do not abide in Christ, you cannot repent again

and return, you cannot be redeemed again! This is what that Word means.

Finally, let us consider one more important example from the Word of God showing what may happen to born-again believers, who resist God's Purpose, ignore or refuse to obey His Word or are not watching and praying as advised by Our Lord. (Mk. 13:33-37) To such slothful and disobedient soulish believers the Lord says the following:

“For if after they have escaped the pollutions of the world through the knowledge of the Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, they are AGAIN entangled therein (in the world), and overcome, the latter end is worse with them than the beginning. For IT HAD BEEN BETTER FOR THEM NOT TO HAVE KNOWN THE WAY OF RIGHTEOUSNESS, than, after they have known it, to turn from the Holy Commandment delivered unto them. But it has happened unto them according to the true Proverb: THE DOG IS TURNED TO HIS OWN VOMIT AGAIN; AND THE SOW THAT WAS WASHED TO HER WALLOWING IN THE MIRE.” (2Pet. 2:20-22)

Our Lord calls such redeemed believers (for whom He shed His Blood) “dogs” and “sows”! How do you truly feel about this Word? How does it sound and “taste” to your Christian sense? And how do you view it in the judgment of your Christian kindness and decency and politeness? This Word is the Judgment and pronouncement of Christ Jesus, the loving, merciful, meek and lowly in heart! (Mt. 11:29) Do we truly SEE it? NO, we don't! We, in our human kindness, would never do it because WE DO NOT SEE WHAT MEN ARE DOING TO GOD IN THEIR DEPRAVED, FILTHY AND DEVILISH NATURE... EVEN AFTER HAVING BEEN REDEEMED! They do not value their Salvation, God's Grace, His Word and the price He paid for us, in any acceptable or even decent way. They remain fools and care not even for their eternal life. Animals have a far greater instinct for survival than men have. Are we able to see this depth of reality with man and God?

Do the above facts make any difference, any impact on your thinking, emotions or on your willingness to ponder it before the Lord? I do pray that it would. The Lord has

been patiently waiting for any open and willing heart and mind and soul! This could be a sure stepping stone to your narrow way which alone leads to perfection and to your becoming a beloved son/daughter of God Almighty, even now, in your present living experience!

SPIRITUAL BELIEVERS

Let me be brief and avoid writing too many things which might distract us from the one principal feature and fact characterizing spiritual believers. That fact is: THEY SEE the spiritual truths, spiritual realities, spiritual world and also themselves. Since they SEE, they also LIVE the spiritual truths and spiritual realities.

They do not judge by what they read, hear or see outwardly, but by what they SEE IN SPIRIT. Therefore, they are able to judge righteously, walk by the Spirit and live by faith, as also Our Lord did. (**Is. 11:1-5**) Their SOUL is being cleansed, renewed, delivered and governed by the Spirit of the Lord. Also, their SPIRIT is being cleansed and perfected in whatever part it is still evil, dark or filthy. (**2Cor. 7:1// Tit. 1:15// Heb. 10:22**) They must hold the mystery of the faith (hidden truth) in a pure conscience. (**1Tim. 3:9**) How perfectly they are walking by the Spirit and living by faith or judging righteously is another matter altogether which depends solely on the degree of their deliverance and cleansing from the flesh in their soul.

Each such believer is on his/her own spiritual level of being perfected. This level depends on the length of time that that believer has been denying himself and taking up his cross and following the Lord (**Mt. 16:24**); how long he has been cleansing himself from all filthiness of flesh and spirit (**2Cor. 7:1**); how long he has been going on unto perfection, (**Heb. 6:1**) working out his own Salvation with fear and trembling. (**Phil. 2:12**) In summation, his level depends

on the degree to which he has crucified his flesh with the affections and lusts thereof. (Gal. 5:24)

Now, why is this work of faith necessary before we can SEE in spirit? The Lord can never impart “spiritual seeing” to our flesh. It means that while our soul is, for example, under the influence of the spirit of pride, hate, fear, self-righteousness, stubbornness or any other evil or unacceptable spirit, it is unable to be at the same time under the spirit of revelation or wisdom! Pride is blind and stupid and it cannot dwell together with wisdom and receive any revelation of truth from God. We know that God resists the proud. (Jam. 4:6// 1Pet. 5:5) Also, we cannot receive any revelations while we speak or live contrary to the Word of God and we are shown this fact. Hence, to whatever degree the above works of faith of the believer and his cooperation with God have been accomplished, to that degree, depth, height and clarity he is able TO SEE IN SPIRIT. To see in spirit is a privilege of every born-again believer, but it is not a reality with every born-again believer.

Let us now consider the issue of PRIDE in more depth and reality because it is an extremely important and wide-spread problem in Christianity carrying with itself great dangers to our spiritual life, to our ministry and to our ultimate destiny! ***“EVERY ONE THAT IS PROUD IN HEART IS AN ABOMINATION TO THE LORD;”*** (Pr. 16:5a)

PRIDE is the chief reason why Our Lord had to die and kill this venom in Himself on His Cross where the Father gave Him a cup to drink (see more later) and laid on Him all our sins and deeds of darkness and evil. PRIDE IS THE CHIEF FEATURE OF THE CHARACTER OF SATAN which we inherited through Adam and Eve after their fall.

THERE IS NO MAN EVER BORN TO THIS WORLD WITHOUT PRIDE! It is only a question of how deep and strong it is in individual men. This pride is NATURAL and is found in every natural soul. A naturally humble and timid man also contains this pride in his natural soul, but it does

not operate in his life in the same way as it does in an outwardly proud man. Therefore, it may be easy to observe outwardly proud or outwardly fearful men as these spirits are clearly “written” all over their countenance. On the other hand, such pride, fear or other spirits may be deeply hidden in man’s soul so that we will not see them easily unless we have the ability to see and judge the fruit of these spirits in the life of such men.

Our Lord desires to warn us of one particularly dangerous and venomous kind of pride – the SPIRITUAL PRIDE. We are not born with this kind of pride and thus it was not a part of our natural soul. We gain it progressively as we acquire greater knowledge of the Bible and religious topics, as we begin to teach others or preach to congregations or build ministries. We already know that intellectual knowledge in a natural soul puffs up that soul. (1Cor. 8:1) The more we are aware of our knowledge and “performance”, the more we are admired and even “worshipped” by ignorant believers, the more books we write, the larger the congregations, the greater and more impressive religious enterprises we run, the more gifts of the Spirit we use or minister to others, the more titles are attached to our names, the more pictures of us are published or hung on the walls of our ministries or institutions, THE GREATER THE SPIRITUAL PRIDE IN OUR SOULS! Are the leaders in the Church aware of this fact?

The mind of spiritually proud believers is always SURE of its knowledge, understanding, ways and decisions. Everything is rationalized and reasoned away and the Word of God is reduced to the level of human reasoning. To deal with such a mind is not only difficult, it is outright impossible without the power of the Holy Spirit Himself. Just as our body may be in, what we call, a “devil’s grip”, so also our soul (mind, heart and will) may also be in such “devil’s grip” through the spiritual pride and its darkness. We are then unable to see simple facts in our mind, have any true perception of important matters in our heart or have power and ability to decide righteously and wisely in spiritual matters.

Why is this kind so dangerous? Believers with spiritual pride may behave as naturally humble people; they may display a “false humility” because even in their natural understanding they know that they ought to be humble. By this false humility they may easily deceive others as being holy and spiritual, while they are not. They may be sincere, honest, diligent, and zealous of good works, but their spiritual pride “colors their ministry” and greatly diminishes its spiritual value. So, why should we take an extra care and effort in dealing with this kind of pride?

SPIRITUAL PRIDE makes believers totally blind to themselves. They may see the natural pride in others, but they can't see the spiritual pride in others, and certainly not in themselves!

SPIRITUAL PRIDE ALWAYS CAUSES SPIRITUAL BLINDNESS.

THE OLD TESTAMENT PHARISEES HAD BOTH KINDS OF PRIDE, THE NATURAL PRIDE BECAUSE OF THEIR POSITION AND ALSO THE SPIRITUAL PRIDE BECAUSE OF THEIR (NATURAL) KNOWLEDGE OF THE SCRIPTURES. THEREFORE, THEIR HATRED AND BITTERNESS TOWARD JESUS CHRIST, THEIR MESSIAH, WAS SO GREAT AND INCURABLE.

THE NEW TESTAMENT PHARISEES ARE THE SAME EVEN THOUGH THEY MAY SAY THEY ‘LOVE THE LORD’. IF OUR NATURAL PRIDE IS NOT DEALT WITH BEFORE WE ACQUIRE THE SPIRITUAL PRIDE, THEN WE ARE IN A VERY PITIFUL, DANGEROUS AND OFTEN INCURABLE STATE INDEED. IT IS OFTEN TOO LATE FOR SUCH BELIEVERS TO STRIVE TO ENTER THE STRAIGHT GATE AND TAKE UP THEIR CROSS AND DENY THEMSELVES. (Lk. 13:24) CAN YOU SEE THIS FACT? TRUTHFULLY?

Spiritual pride blocks our spiritual vision but allows our intellectual faculty to function. The result is that any minister, who is affected by this kind of pride, is unable to discern spiritually what he is preaching or teaching. Yet, he may be very active and diligent in his intellectual religious activities including teaching, preaching or writing books. These believers are following a rule that...

WHATEVER I AGREE WITH, THAT IS TRUTH AND WHATEVER I DISAGREE WITH, THAT IS NOT TRUTH! BUT NO TRUE SERVANT OF GOD HAS THE RIGHT TO LIVE AND ACT BY SUCH A SPIRITUALLY PRIMITIVE AND SCRIPTURALLY TOTALLY WRONG RULE.

THE WORD OF GOD MUST "BOW TO THEIR INTELLECT", RATHER THAN THEIR INTELLECT WOULD BOW TO THE WORD OF GOD! NO TRUE SERVANT OF GOD EVER ACTED THIS WAY AND ELEVATED HIS MENTAL KNOWLEDGE AND UNDERSTANDING ABOVE THE SPIRITUAL KNOWLEDGE OF THE WORD HIMSELF. (Jn. 1:1// 1Jn. 5:7) DO WE SEE THIS FACT?

Spiritual pride, especially in the ministers of the Word, causes great damages in the spiritual development and growth of God's people. One example is the following.

There is a preacher in Atlanta, Georgia, USA, whom the Lord put into my heart from the moment I saw him preaching on TV for the first time about 5 years ago. He preaches on many topics of the Bible and produces many sermons and teachings, writes many books and leaflets. But some of his doctrines and messages (also on DVDs) are not based on the whole Truth of the Word of God. They contain spiritual errors in being contrary to other passages of the Word of God which are being ignored. The Holy Spirit cannot support such doctrines or messages, hence, their fruitfulness is greatly diminished and believers get a false picture and are thereby deceived! They acquire beliefs, which do not and cannot correspond to the Truth of the Word as breathed by the Spirit of the Lord. Any partial truth is very dangerous as it always contradicts the whole truth and thus deceives people! (ex. **Gen. 3:4,5**)

Two major spiritual errors which the Lord had pointed out to him in writing are the following:

1 – The doctrine of the *"unconditional love of God for every believer"* is FALSE! It is a humanistic belief and it deceives multitudes of believers, who remain comfortable and see no need to strive or endeavour to have and keep His Commandments in their earthly life. The Lord says clearly:

“He that has My commandments (in his heart) and keeps them, he it is that loves Me; and HE THAT LOVES ME SHALL BE LOVED OF MY FATHER AND I WILL LOVE HIM, and will manifest Myself to him.” (Jn. 14:21)

What if you, born-again and baptized believer, do not have His Commandments in your heart (only in your memory) or do not keep them even years after your redemption? Will the Lord and His Father love you just because you believed in Jesus and were baptized? From where would you take such a strange doctrine? In fact, a born-again, baptized believer, who does not love the Lord, shall be CURSED! (1Cor. 16:22) So, is there a clear condition for God’s love for you in Jn. 14:21 and Jn. 15:10? Is His love unconditional or is it conditional? Can you answer this simple question in truth? My eleven years old granddaughter (whom I baptized in the summer of 2007) understands this clearly, and she is not a doctor of theology; this reminds me of the Word in Lk. 2:46,47.

In your natural soul, you may believe that you do keep His Commandments, and that you do love the Lord. In reality, you may not even be aware that you love yourself or your father or mother or son or daughter (much) more than you love the Lord, in which case, you are not worthy of Him. (Mt. 10:37) Natural soul cannot judge itself righteously because it is blind.

2 – The doctrine of “Once saved, for ever saved” with no possibility of losing one’s Salvation is totally FALSE! And DANGEROUS! It deceives multitudes of believers even more and exposes them to the dangers of losing their life eternal. Tears of their repentance may come too late... if they come at all! This fact was already shown from the Scripture and discussed before (see again pages 58-62).

These above points are never preached and never explained to the believers in the Light of the WORD OF GOD! The fact that we may sometimes teach or preach an incorrect doctrine is not a tragedy before the Lord. We do not start from our perfection, we should end there. The

Lord sent to this preacher His Word from our Mission in Slovakia (Central Europe), which was delivered to his hands. He did not reply! Another five letters were mailed to him concerning the above spiritual facts. We are unsure whether he received them or not, but we have received no responses.

All proud ministers are already under the Judgment of the Lord and they do not even know it, do not see it and cannot believe it. (Pr. 16:5,6) Why? They preach and teach believers to be meek, teachable and open minded to receive what the Lord is giving to them through others, yet, they do not follow their own sermons in their own lives! They do not see and realize that this good advice applies to them just as much as to the “not-so-educated sheep” in the pews. They all behave as if the Lord God had nothing new to show them and teach them, to correct them and to further deliver them mainly from their spiritual pride, self-righteousness, self-confidence, self-respect, self-sufficiency and the other selfishness even after having preached for many (20-30-40-50) years! Is this not a Great Tragedy?

THE LENGTH OF MINISTRY IS NO GUARANTEE OF ANY SPIRITUAL PROGRESS! The proud REFUSE to be perfected by the Lord! During all those years of their ministry, they may have never shed a tear of remorse or repentance from their eyes being on their knees before the Lord of this Universe!

How many such ministers of God serve in His Church and may cause irreparable damages to multitudes of honest, sincere but naïve or ignorant believers who depend on them? Those that are spiritually blind cannot receive any Light from the Lord. They are unwilling to even admit that they may be deceived and that they do not know everything perfectly. Blindness is the fruit of pride.

Now, the blind man in **Jn. 9:25b** knew he was blind and it was natural for him to ask the Lord for his eyesight. The problem with us is that we do not know that we are, or may be, spiritually blind; therefore, we do not ask the Lord for our spiritual eyesight! But when we ask not, we have not, we receive not. (**Jam. 4:2b**) So, it seems impossible to

receive spiritual eyesight from the Lord when we do not ask Him; and we do not ask Him because we do not know (and cannot believe) that we are spiritually blind. What is then the solution to break out of this “vicious circle”?

I believe that the simplest solution is, if we could deny ourselves, overcome our pride, personal convictions, persuasions and beliefs and just tell the Lord a simple thing:

“Lord, I do not know whether I am spiritually blind or not. I cannot be sure. I simply do not see that I would be blind. I am, therefore, asking You, Lord, that if I am truly blind, please, give me the eyesight that I may see and understand in spirit, that I may see You as YOU TRULY ARE in Your Word. Thank You, Lord. Amen”.

I do not believe for one second that the Lord would refuse your request. I believe, in fact, that He has been waiting for multitudes of believers just for such a prayer because it is His desire more than ours that we, true believers, would all SEE.

Apostle Paul gives us a very effective solution in his letter to Ephesians. After having heard of their faith in the Lord and love unto all the saints, he does not cease to give thanks for them and prays **“That the God of Our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of Glory, may give unto you the Spirit of WISDOM and REVELATION in the knowledge of Him; the EYES of your (spiritual) understanding being enlightened (opened);”** (Eph. 1:15-18a) We all need this prayer all our earthly life. Do we see this need only for others?

The same goes for the darkened heart which does not know itself and does not understand its own motives, goals and intentions which are always behind all the heart’s desires. No matter how good and noble such desires, goals or intentions of our natural heart may be, they are always tainted with our personal character, hence, they are always selfish! If our natural heart is **“deceitful above all things, and desperately wicked”** (Jer. 17:9), we may be sure that neither our born-again experience, nor our water baptism had changed that kind of heart in any noticeable, quick or sufficient way.

The Lord cannot take His abode in such a heart and cannot govern it in any way. Yet, such a heart may be sincerely convinced that it is given to work for the Lord, for His Glory, to follow the “calling of the Lord” upon itself. Any notion questioning these things would be flatly rejected. Such a heart (soul) may be quite easily offended upon hearing that its intentions, desires and goals may not be of God to a large extent, or not at all! This would be viewed as an unfair attack on that soul!

The Church at Ephesus was apparently on the highest spiritual level from all the churches that Apostle Paul founded and corresponded with. Paul heard of their faith in the Lord and love for all the saints, which seems to be a rare commodity in many churches of today. And yet...

DESPITE THEIR FAITH IN THE LORD AND LOVE FOR THE SAINTS, THEY WERE STILL SPIRITUALLY BLIND AND NEEDED THE SPIRIT OF WISDOM AND REVELATION AND OPENING OF THEIR SPIRITUAL EYES! (PLEASE, READ THIS WORD OF GOD IN **Eph. 1:15-18 AGAIN AND AGAIN AND AGAIN AND AGAIN... AND SEE AND UNDERSTAND ITS DEPTH!)**

FAITH AND LOVE ARE TWO INSEPARABLE FOUNDATION STONES THAT ARE REQUIRED FOR ANY FURTHER ADVANCEMENT OF THE SAINTS IN THE AREA OF SPIRITUAL SEEING AND THUS IN SPIRITUAL LIVING. (**Gal. 5:6// 1Tim. 1:5,14// Philemon 5**) THEY ARE ALSO THE “TWO BREASTS” OF THE MAIDEN OF SHULAMITE WHICH MUST GROW AND BE EQUAL IN ORDER THAT SHE MAY BE PERFECT IN THE SIGHT OF HER BELOVED – THE LORD JESUS CHRIST. (**S.Sol. 4:5; 7:3; 8:8,10**)

HE, WHO DOES NOT SEE IN SPIRIT, CANNOT LIVE IN SPIRIT. HE, WHO HAS NO TRUE LOVE AND TRUE FAITH, CAN SEE NOTHING IN SPIRIT. SPIRITUAL SEEING GOES HAND-IN-HAND WITH LIVING IN SPIRIT. THE SPIRITUAL LIFE GIVES THE SPIRITUAL EYESIGHT. IT IS IMPOSSIBLE TO SEE IN SPIRIT AND LIVE CARNAL LIFE OR VICE-VERSA. HENCE, THE DEGREE OF OUR SPIRITUAL EYESIGHT DETERMINES OUR DEGREE OF LIVING THE ETERNAL LIFE OF GOD IN OUR EARTHLY LIFE HERE AND NOW!

We must devote our absolutely undivided attention to this MOST IMPORTANT ISSUE in the earthly lives of true believers which is the matter of SEEING THE UNSEEN OR BEING BLIND TO IT. THE UNSEEN THINGS ARE ETERNAL AND MORE REAL THAN THE THINGS SEEN! This fact is surely a great controversy and mystery to every natural soul.

Our very Redemption, the beginning of our Salvation, was a matter of our SEEING the facts which were previously UNSEEN to us, namely, that we were sinners and needed a Saviour. We did not understand it, but we SAW it. All the ends of the earth have SEEN the Salvation of God! (**Ps. 98:3b**) Also, the Grace of God that brings Salvation appeared to ALL MEN TO SEE! (**Tit. 2:11**) And again, the GOSPEL WAS PREACHED TO EVERY CREATURE UNDER HEAVEN! (**Col. 1:23b**)

Missionaries and evangelists should take a note of these Words of the Scripture though they are also guided by **Rom. 10:14-18**. This latter Word does not contradict the other three quoted above! Yet, the Salvation of peoples does not depend solely on missionaries and evangelists.

What men did or still do with this Grace and Light of God is a different story. After having traveled through many countries of the world, I have experienced the outright tragic fact that when this Grace and Light of God, that were made visible to all people, are rejected in their hearts, shortly thereafter, Satan comes and replaces them with his darkness and deceptions which become much deeper than they were before the people saw the Grace and Light. Multitudes of peoples had made tragic choices in their hearts in rejecting that Grace and Light and keeping the darkness.

Our SEEING THE UNSEEN has become our spiritual, miraculous and supernatural foundation on which our whole Redemption and the ensuing Christianity has been based. If you have never seen anything in your conscience, you may not be a true born-again believer, you may still be a pagan as before, only this time you may be a "religious pagan", who received this Light into your mind and memory, but not

into your heart. That makes the difference between Life and Death. Why do we absolutely have to SEE?

WE SIMPLY CANNOT ACCEPT OR DECIDE ON ANYTHING WHICH WE DO NOT SEE EITHER WITH OUR PHYSICAL EYES, OR WITH OUR “MENTAL EYES” (*understanding, imagination, logic*) OR WITH OUR “SPIRITUAL EYES” (*faith*). BUT WE MUST SEE TO DECIDE EITHER IN PHYSICAL OR SOULISH OR SPIRITUAL WORLD.

All our efforts in teaching, preaching, persuading, arguing, pleading, emotional pressuring even threatening will not bring any results or any life to anybody. Imagine arguing with Saul of Tarsus and trying to persuade him about Jesus of Nazareth. After your many prolonged and zealous efforts, he would still ponder how to get rid of “that hopeless and dangerous heretic”. There was NO WAY TO PERSUADE SAUL OF ANYTHING HE COULD NOT SEE. It took one look at the Lord where HE COULD SEE what he had never seen before – and that did it! He turned around “on a dime” and became the chief writer of the most important and profound Epistles in the New Testament!

How many “Sauls of Tarsus” exist and even minister in the Church today? I do not mean such that would not believe in Jesus of Nazareth, but such that are similarly zealous and NOT SEEING the spiritual truths and realities which Jesus of Nazareth established in the New Testament and desires all believers to SEE. But He cannot show them because of the unbelief in their flesh, which blocks the spiritual seeing; because they are not (at least sufficiently) crucified to receive the Spirit of wisdom and revelation and the opening of their spiritual eyes. Unbelief is the greatest sin man can commit against God! In its essence, unbelief touches the very Holiness and Character of God making Him a liar!

So, what spiritual truth would Our Lord desire to show believers today? Let us see three of His practical points.

1) The Lord does not need (more) men in His Church, who can read and write, study, prepare sermons, teach and

preach. There are plenty of such. He needs (more) men, who are crucified (**Gal. 5:24**) and thus able to SEE IN SPIRIT AND TRANSFORM BELIEVERS INTO THE IMAGE OF CHRIST AND NOT ONLY TEACH THEM FROM THE BIBLE! BIBLE TEACHING HAS NOT CHANGED ANY ONE INTO THE IMAGE OF CHRIST.

They must see beyond their intellectual understanding whether their words are dead or living; whether it is all intellectual or spiritual. There is NO LIFE in our reading or studying, there is NO LIFE in our natural mind! Are their words "spirit and life" (**Jn. 6:63**) or are they only logical thoughts? There is NO LIFE IN THOUGHTS OR IN LOGIC either. Even if carnal, fleshly preachers should preach the Cross, it would be of no effect (**1Cor. 1:17**) because such preachers have never been to their cross! They have no personal experience with the Lord and thus, for them, His Cross is a theory, doctrine, which may be the basis of their true faith, but not necessarily of their life. Their own cross is also only a theory and not their life.

Many are quite able to produce interesting even fascinating sermons or stories and bring God into them and achieve their own goals and purposes thereby. Many ministers have to keep those thousands of believers coming back, filling the auditoria and paying their tithes and offerings. The Lord does not even ask whether their work or sermon contained sufficient truth or not, but whether it gave out spiritual life or death. Don't we see that WE MAY SPEAK TRUTH IN DEATH OR IN LIFE? All our ways and works are "clean in our own eyes", but the Lord weighs our SPIRITS! (**Pr. 16:2**) Are they living or dead? Are they from our nature or from His Nature? Is their source our natural, religiously educated soul or is it His Spirit? Can we tell the difference?

THE LORD SAYS THAT HIS CHURCH IS WRETCHED, AND MISERABLE, AND POOR, AND BLIND, AND NAKED! **HE** COUNSELS HER TO BUY FROM **HIM** GOLD TRIED IN THE FIRE THAT SHE MAY BE RICH; AND WHITE RAIMENT THAT SHE MAY BE CLOTHED... AND EYESALVE THAT SHE MAY SEE... FOR SHE HAS NO SPIRITUAL DISCERNMENT! (**Rev. 3:17b,18**)

The ministry of teaching or preaching in the Church is too often an INTELLECTUAL STRIVING to persuade believers about the matter taught or preached WITHOUT realizing that ***“the servant of the Lord MUST NOT STRIVE;”*** (2Tim. 2:24)

Also, it is based on showing logical connections in the Word of God and their logical explanations WITHOUT THEIR SPIRITUAL MEANING. It is further based on a continuous repeating of the “sweet” promises of God to believers WITHOUT explaining God’s conditions for us that would enable us to receive His promises. It is based on showing what God will do for believers WITHOUT explaining what believers must first do for God according to His Word. It is also based on taking one or two “harmonizing verses” of the Scripture on any chosen topic of the sermon WITHOUT considering also the verses which may “change the harmony” of our intellectual understanding of the chosen verses, etc. Believers then clap their hands and “praise the Lord” and jump and are happy and go home deceived possibly even more than they were before they came to such a “ministry”.

Let us give another, deeper example of spiritual seeing and life as opposed to spiritual blindness and death.

An honest, sincere, devout, faithful, diligent, trustworthy but “uncrucified, soulish preacher” gives a sermon. His congregation may be excited even fascinated at the way the topic was preached, explained and substantiated from the Scripture.

Let us assume that what was preached was truth from the Scripture and the notes and explanations were correct. Yet, it all was intellectual information from the mind of the preacher to the minds of the listeners, who may have made notes into their notebooks. But after the initial excitement and fascination with the topic, these believers leave for home the same as they were before they came in with no new and living change in their spirit or in their perception. The new and fascinating information was absorbed by the same old character. They can still see nothing in spirit because the preacher sees nothing in spirit.

Another preacher comes and he may preach EXACTLY THE SAME TRUTH. The congregation may not hear more truth than before. Yet they receive something living, something that will not leave them the same. Something that has the power to “move them to execute in their soul the truth received”. They have SEEN something, which they have never seen before while hearing the same truth...and may have a hard time to explain it. So what made the difference? THE PREACHER IS CRUCIFIED IN HIS FLESH AND THUS HE COULD SEE IN SPIRIT THE TRUTH HE HAS PREACHED BECAUSE HE IS ALSO **LIVING** THAT TRUTH IN HIS OWN LIFE AND CAN THEREBY BRING LIFE, PROGRESS AND GROWTH TO OTHERS. His words ARE SPIRIT and they ARE LIFE. Therefore the believers that are truly “hungry and thirsty” can be filled and grow up into Christ. (Mt. 5:6// Eph. 4:15)

Have you ever eaten food that was pasteurized? It may look the same, taste the same as the non-pasteurized one... but THE PASTEURIZED FOOD IS DEAD! All the living enzymes in it were killed by the process of pasteurization. Your body had received the “same food”, but not the living nutrition, not the energy required for your body to function properly. So it is in our spiritual life! While in grocery stores we can see on the can or package the written note “Pasteurized”, or even “Ultra Pasteurized”, we cannot see such a note on the “package” of any sermon, teaching or on any “Christian book” written and published by carnal authors.

OUR NATURAL SOUL WITH ITS THOUGHTS, EMOTIONS, REASONING, DOUBTS, PREJUDICES AND SPIRITUAL BLINDNESS IS WELL ABLE TO EFFECTIVELY PASTEURIZE THE LIVING WORD OF GOD AND MAKE IT A SPIRITUALLY DEAD FOOD!... WITH NO SPIRITUAL NUTRITION AND ABILITY TO GIVE LIVING ENERGY AND LIVING FAITH TO THOSE THAT “EAT IT”. DO YOU SEE IT?

SHOULD WE NOT PRAY TO OUR LORD, WHO IS THE LIVING WORD TO KEEP US FROM THIS SIN EVEN IF WE DO IT IGNORANTLY AND WITH ALL OUR GOOD INTENTIONS?

The Body of Christ doesn't need lecturers, professors, entertainers, storytellers, fundraisers, screamers, perform-

ers or comedians, it needs SPIRITUAL LIFE GIVERS. The Lord asks you to read His Word in Eph. 4:11-16, especially verse 13. The Lord says that after 2000 years of preaching from the Bible, instead of coming ***“in the unity of the faith and of the knowledge of the Son of God unto a perfect man...”***, THE CHURCH IS SO DIVIDED AND DISUNITED AND DEAD IN SPIRIT AS NEVER BEFORE IN HER ENTIRE HISTORY! Are you, believers, offended by this truth? You will be, if you do not see it.

So, what is the true reason for this lamentable situation? In fact, the reason is quite simple. After 2000 years of preaching the Bible, believers have received mountains of pasteurized teachings, doctrines, sermons, stories either in spoken or written form, which resulted in a great reservoir of mental knowledge. But that great mental knowledge has not transformed believers into the Image of Christ and it has not brought the Life of Christ into their souls and daily living. It could not be apprehended by believers in any living way. It simply remained a nice theory while the reality in believers is the opposite and it does not correspond to that vast knowledge in any way. That “perfect intellectual knowledge” produced little spiritual effect within the Church; that’s why the Church has no power and no authority in this world either. The present lamentable state of the world is also due to the lamentable state of the Church! How will the Lord judge us? Do we know? No, we don’t.

So after 2000 years, the Church is anything but perfect and its spiritual knowledge of the Son of God is pretty close to zero! Do you believe this? Do you SEE this? I do not blame any one, who may not see this truth because it took me many years of my walking with the Lord before I started to see it myself. But the Lord desires that I state this truth at this place whether people see it or not. We cannot bypass important issues and make them “taboo” just because they may not suite our understanding or imaginations or because they may offend our proud souls.

2) The Lord does not need a Church that cannot be recognized from the world! I will give you one such striking

example. One day, as I was on a mission in the USA, I turned on the TV and, being unfamiliar with the local channels, I only guessed what was shown on the screen. I saw there a man in a Hell's Angel's outfit and a Harley-Davidson motorbike behind him. It was on January 27th, 2008 and it took me a while to see a pulpit and a preacher [Kenneth Hagin, jr.] on TBN channel. (Trinity Broadcasting Network in Santa Anna, California) I had no clue what he was trying to say and why he impersonated a Hell's Angel. My only question was: "Was it the Spirit of the Lord that guided him into such a performance or the human reasoning and thoughts of his natural mind?" He would, of course, claim that it was the Holy Spirit guiding him... as many like preachers and ministers always claim.

But the Lord says: "*NO! My Spirit never guides ministers to appeal to the outward senses or to the logical understanding of believers or to masquerade as other persons or creatures.*" This Word closes the case for multitudes of soulish ministers in the Church.

At another day in another motel, I saw a colorful performance of a music band and dancers which looked as if it were being performed in some night club. It was again TBN channel. Yet another day, I saw a young man, long hair and tattoos all over his body. He was advertising some book that he wrote. It took me some time to see that he was interviewed again on TBN channel by a man and his wife. He claimed that "*Jesus saved him one year ago*"... yet His Spirit somehow never lead him during that one year to cut his long hair (**1Cor. 11:14**) and cover his disfigured body from being seen on national television! Who allowed him to appear on TV half naked showing off his tattoos? It was definitely not the Holy Spirit, Who desired to advertise the "works of the devil" on national television. (**Phil. 4:8**)

It is sometimes dangerous to open this TBN channel for your children to watch and then have to explain to them that "this is the Church of Jesus Christ". But TBN also presents some good and profitable programs; it just seems that the Director of programming has little spiritual discernment.

His TRUE Church takes nothing from this world, which is now cursed and will soon be destroyed because His TRUE CHURCH is not of this world, but is heavenly! Do we have any living concept what the Church really is and what that means? I believe that we don't.

3) The Lord does not need a Church that is organized by man, run by man, governed by man, who may have good religious education, right titles, influence, money, status or reputation. If any church is run by man, it is NOT His Church, because HIS CHURCH IS BUILT BY CHRIST ALONE AND RUN BY HIS SPIRIT ALONE! (Mt. 16:18)

Firstly, His true Church is not an organization of any kind; it is an ORGANISM... a living organism that lives by the Life of Christ, which is the "blood" of His Body. Do we experience that? NO, we don't because there is no unity in the Church.

When you look at your own body you must see clearly that it was not organized by any organ or member of your body or outside of your body. It was created by God in an absolute harmony of all its organs and members which are interdependent. They all live together by one life and care for one another without any problems. Their life is supplied to every cell of the body in the blood which carries all the necessary nutrition and oxygen ("food, drink and fresh air") to every cell. And if in any part of your body the blood does not flow, that part is paralyzed, numb and dead. True?

Why should we be surprised to learn that the Body of Christ functions exactly in the same way? The Spirit of God is the Life of it that "flows" to every "cell" of His Body. And if in any part of it, in any member, this Life does not "flow", that part, that member, is paralyzed, numb and dead! True? But the Lord is not building a dead Body, but a Living Body, functioning in love, interdependence, mutual support where each member has the same care for one another. (1Cor. 12: 25-27) I have not experienced even one local church like this in the entire 40 years of my Christian ministry. The Lord Jesus Christ is my Living Witness.

Any suggestion that “the man who runs the Church” is led by the Spirit is in too many cases absolutely FALSE! Almost all existing “churches” are organized as any other entity or corporation of this world; they are businesses advertising themselves as any other business of this world, with the possible exception of smaller house groups. They are religious institutions with leadership “chosen and appointed by men”, by Boards of Directors, Trustees or functionaries that may not know the Lord at all. The Lord allowed man to build, organize and run these religious entities according to man’s own ideas, beliefs and intentions which, I believe, in most cases must have been very honorable and honest and right. But His Spirit is not governing the life and activities of such institutions since He would have to act against the will, decisions and desires of man’s free will. So, the Lord at least directs the steps of those men, who devised their ministries in their heart. (**Pr. 16:9**) Those that devised them in their mind only do not have this privilege.

Secondly, THE LORD DOES NOT DESIRE “OUR BEST”, HE DESIRES “OUR DEATH”! BECAUSE OUT OF THE DEATH OF OUR OLD LIFE COMES NEW LIFE, NEW CREATURE, WHOM HE DESIRES AND FOR WHOM HE DIED! (**2Cor. 4:10-12**) Our Lord is not impressed or delighted when our “old religious man” plays to Him “sacred music”, sings (or screams) religious hymns or congregates in ornate buildings with a cross on their roof. When we try to offer to God “our best” then we are like unto Cain, who also offered to God the best that his own hand produced from the earth (**1Cor. 15:47,48**) and his offering was refused. When his brother Abel offered a lamb, it was a blood offering; the lamb represented Abel’s own life and Abel “LEGALLY” died on that altar. God was truly pleased and accepted his offering. And when Cain being wroth killed his brother Abel, Cain became cursed! (**Gen. 4:1-11**) So, when we sit on gold plated chairs, congregate in ornate buildings, sing religious hymns, give offerings, conduct interviews or run financially successful ministries, it does not necessarily mean that we are blessed servants of God. Do we SEE this fact? NO! There is not one soulish believer, who can see this.

If you do not see it, then see the following. Take the Judaism, ecclesiasticism, sectarianism, denominationalism, Romanism, Protestantism and all the other religious factions and tell me: Is it the Spirit of the Lord, Who created them and runs them? Is it TRULY Him? Do you belong to any of these factions and organizations and institutions which have nothing common among themselves though they are all based on the same One Book? It is a slap in the face of the Lord Jesus Christ and His Word which clearly declares that *“there is ONE Body (One Church), ONE Spirit ... ONE Lord, ONE faith, ONE baptism.”* (Eph. 4:4,5) Not many faiths, but ONE! Where is that ONENess? Do you see it? NO! It is nowhere! That is the reason why the ecumenical movement was born years ago, to “unite” these hopelessly divided factions, which is impossible to do anyway.

Also, His Word demands us to be of ONE mind, not of many minds! (2Cor. 13:11// Phil. 1:27; 2:2// 1Pet. 3:8// Eph. 4:13,14) To our unimaginable shame, His Word tells us that the ten evil kings who shall make war with the Lamb, THEY WILL HAVE ONE MIND (Rev. 17:12,13), BUT NOT THE CHURCH! The Lord, therefore, does not recognize religious entities created by men. Do you now SEE what the Lord means in this point? Or will you try to reason within yourself and explain this tragedy according to your view and understanding? Will you also do it when you will stand in front of the Living Son of God? I do doubt. I must sometimes use harsh words to wake up those that believe and sleep... and for whom the Son of God shed His Blood as well!

The Lord may be often asked in our prayers to help us in our efforts and bless our religious projects, but He does not do such things nor is He a part of them. He only blesses HIS PROJECTS, which we may not understand and desire and which may be unappealing to us because they all are contrary to our natural ways. I believe that the religion that is organized by man can never understand anything that is NOT organized, not advertised, not run or governed by man! In the eyes of many religious leaders of today, you must be organized, you must advertise, do fundraising,

have the necessary publicity and run all things in worldly ways.

So the Lord is “unable” to build or run His Church in this modern world without the help of this world, without governments even without today’s technology (which would be totally illogical to the natural mind), without any organization because THEY CANNOT SEE IT, imagine it, understand it and thus they cannot believe it! But let them reread the passages about the Early Church and see how well they were “organized” and how effective in changing the world without worldly ways and without being run by any man or organization. They had no radio, no television, no newspapers, no computers, no books... “just” the Spirit of God.

When God organizes something, it reflects its absolute unity, order, harmony, beauty, interdependence, interaction, intercommunication and thus it fulfills its true purposes. When man (or the devil through man) started to create “religion” with its “churches”, nothing of the above materialized. There is no unity, no harmony, no order, no beauty, no love, no interdependence, no interaction, no intercommunication in it; therefore, its life, usefulness and true purpose are not there as God had them in the Early Church and as He clearly has them in His physical creation. Until God cleans this mess and disorder that man (or the devil through man) created, He cannot obtain from His Church what He purposed and what He desires. We may also state that the devil is the “king” of disorder, disunity, disharmony, ugliness, hatred, independence, isolationism, divisiveness, disruption, carelessness, chaos, etc.

Let us return for a while to Saul of Tarsus. Nobody doubts or argues that he was totally blind toward Jesus and His Truth. Also, nobody doubts his extreme zeal for God, for the sacred traditions, for all those things that were well accepted and established within Judaism. Hence, nobody should doubt his fears of anything “*new and quite dangerous*” which seemed very able to destroy all that he believed in and cherished and tried to preserve with his own life! Can we blame him for his blindness? NO!

Can we blame the like ministers in the Church for their blindness? NO! They may have equal zeal as Saul had, equal desire to protect what they believe in, equal fear of anything “*new and quite dangerous*”! Yet, some one has to declare these spiritual facts and realities as the Lord sees them and as He desires us to see them!

The Lord will not judge us as unworthy because we are blind – He will judge us IF WE REFUSE TO SEE WHAT HE SHOWS, IF WE REFUSE TO RECEIVE OUR SPIRITUAL EYESIGHT, IF WE REFUSE TO SEEK TRUTH AND THE RIGHTEOUSNESS OF THE KINGDOM OF GOD. But **THIS** is the only way to recognize and believe that what appears to our natural soul as a “*new and dangerous way*” **IS** the way of Our Lord! And that the way we have been faithfully walking on for years is NOT the true way of the Lord. That is **exactly** what happened to Saul of Tarsus! Can we SEE that? For Saul YES, for ourselves NO!

WE DO NOT HAVE ALL THE WISDOM OR ALL THE KNOWLEDGE OF GOD AND WE DO NOT SEE EVERYTHING AS WE OUGHT TO SEE. THEREFORE, THE WORD IN **EPH. 1:17,18** SHOULD NEVER CEASE TO BE A VITAL PART OF OUR CHRISTIAN LIFE AS LONG AS WE LIVE ON THIS EARTH. IF YOU DO NOT NEED THIS WORD, YOU DO NOT NEED THE LORD. AND IF WE REFUSE TO RECEIVE FROM HIM WHAT THIS PRAYER ASKS, NAMELY, NEW AND MUCH DEEPER WISDOM, NEW AND MUCH DEEPER KNOWLEDGE OF HIM AND NEW AND MUCH DEEPER SPIRITUAL INSIGHT, DISCERNMENT, ETC., THEN MAY HIS MERCY BE WITH US WHEN WE STAND BEFORE HIS JUDGMENT SEAT! (**2Cor. 5:10**)

The Lord desires to show us also Peter that we may SEE him as a typical and even transparent example of a man, who, despite his zeal and love for the Lord, WAS BLIND IN SPIRIT. HE HAD NOT EVEN STARTED TO SEE those spiritual realities until after the Pentecost. Also, he did not see his own blindness until the Lord started showing him this fact on “his own skin”. The typical and well known incident is found in **Mt. 26:33-35** where Peter was “*ready to die for the Lord*” and where the Lord plainly told Peter that he was “*dreaming in color*”. Later on, Peter found that out on his

own skin and wept bitterly. (Mt. 26:69-75) This is the case with many soulish believers, who have never seen and understood themselves in their own soul and spirit.

A truly important picture concerning our SPIRIT and SOUL, their respective power, spiritual status and differences is found in Mt. 16:16,17,22,23. In verse 16, the Father revealed to Peter's SPIRIT (to his conscience) the truth about His Son, and the Lord acknowledged it. In verse 22, Satan gave to Peter's SOUL (mind) his thoughts concerning the death and resurrection of Jesus. While the Father could "speak" to the spirit (conscience) of Peter, Satan could "speak" to his soul (mind). Had Peter had any spiritual discernment, vision, an eye to SEE, he would have never rebuked the Lord. To "rebuke the Lord" is in itself a contradiction and contempt by any man.

In Mt. 16:23 the Lord clearly declares that PETER'S NATURAL AND BLIND SOUL WAS AN OFFENCE TO HIM AS IT SERVED SATAN AND HIS PURPOSES. Let us clearly understand that THE NATURAL AND BLIND SOUL IS ALWAYS AN OFFENCE TO THE LORD NO MATTER IN WHAT PAGAN OR BELIEVER IT LIVES! That is also the reason why in the very next verses (24 and 25), the Lord continues declaring the vitally important truth about the life of our natural soul and what happens, if we would keep it or lose it for His sake.

Finally, Peter's infamous answer to the Lord in Acts 10:13,14: "**Not so, Lord.**" It shows us clearly the power of traditions and beliefs of our natural soul which CANNOT be changed or replaced by new beliefs in any way except when WE SEE the "new" truth. In our natural and honest soul, we are able to say even to Our God Almighty: "*Not so, God.*" Was the Lord upset? NO! He understood Peter clearly so He repeated His vision to Peter three times.

The fact which the Lord desires us to SEE and understand at this point is this. There are millions of believers including leaders in the Church, who are exactly like Peter. They are "stuck" with their traditional beliefs based on the

traditional education, the understanding and feelings of their natural soul even though they have the Light in their spirit about the Son of God revealed to them by the Father! Despite this fact, their NATURAL SOUL is still an OFFENCE TO THE LORD because it may ignorantly serve Satan! Furthermore, they are quite able to oppose the Almighty God, Who may show to them Truth in a “new”, deeper way and that, either directly or through His servants. But their natural soul says: “Not so, Lord”. The Lord may reply: “What Truth has God shown to you that call not thou untrue... just because you do not agree with it”. (see Acts 10:15)

The Lord also says to us “**He that trusts in his OWN HEART is a fool.**” (Pr. 28:26)

Another important point about our SOUL and SPIRIT which the Lord desires us to SEE and understand at this time is in Mt. 13:10-16 and Is. 6:8-10. The essence of His Word, as I see it in my spirit, can be summarized in this way. His true disciples were “given to know the mysteries of the Kingdom”, but to the masses it was not given. His disciples could thus perceive things in their SPIRIT, but the masses could only see, hear and understand in their SOUL. (Mt. 13:11// see also Jn. 8:31,32)

“For whosoever has (spiritual ability to see, hear and understand) to him shall be given (more) and he shall have more abundance; but whosoever has not (this ability) from him shall be taken away even that he has (in his soulish life, because he will lose it).” (Mt. 13:12; 16:25)

This truth is further confirmed in Mt. 13:13-15 where a very important fact is expressed by the Lord. Here He declares that

“this people’s heart is waxed gross (became fat, unresponsive); and their ears are dull of hearing (they do not desire to hear what does not interest them), and THEIR EYES THEY HAVE CLOSED; lest at any time they should see with their eyes and hear with their ears and should understand with their HEART, and should be CONVERTED and I should HEAL them.”

The very core of this Word of God is in one word, namely, "**CONVERTED**". What should these people be converted from and to what? All these believers should be CONVERTED FROM THEIR NATURAL SOUL LIFE TO THE SPIRIT LIFE; FROM THEIR SOULISH PERCEPTIONS TO THE SPIRITUAL PERCEPTIONS! Otherwise they cannot be healed! This also means that in the eyes and understanding of the Lord, THE SOULISH BELIEVERS ARE SICK. Health only comes from Life and the Life is only in Spirit. Here the Lord speaks to His Own people of Israel and the future Church; the first Church was Jewish! The Lord does not speak here about a conversion of pagans to believers.

This is the truth about many believers, including many leaders in Israel and in the Church: THEY DO NOT WANT TO SEE, HEAR OR UNDERSTAND THE TRUTH OF GOD! Are you reading this simple, but tragic truth with an open mind and heart and conscience? Are you truly registering what the Lord is saying with His own mouth to His own Disciples about the multitudes? THEIR SOUL DOES NOT DESIRE TO SEE OR HEAR THE TRUTH, which Truth goes against their own plans, goals, intentions, beliefs, thoughts and comfort. Anything hurting their soul is rejected including the Truth of God which may hurt our soul deeply and frequently during our transformation process. Are you truly aware what your own heart desires and what it is closed to? Really?

PLEASE, SEE AND UNDERSTAND THAT WE SIMPLY CAN'T BE TRANSFORMED INTO CHRIST'S IMAGE WITHOUT ANY PAIN, ANY SUFFERING, ANY CONFLICT! OUR SALVATION PROCESS IS NOT A CONTINUOUS HAPPINESS, PROSPERITY, ABUNDANCE OF EARTHLY THINGS, PLEASURES, HEALTH, JOY, LAUGHTER OR WHATEVER OUR SOUL MAY DESIRE. WE WILL HAVE ALL OF THIS IN HEAVEN AND MORE... IF WE GET THERE.

The above few examples should be quite sufficient in showing us the great difference between our SOUL and SPIRIT. The difference between these two is the matter of our DEATH or LIFE, health or sickness. We can express this fact also in the following way.

UNTIL OUR NATURAL SOUL BEGINS TO SEE AND LIVE IN SPIRIT, IT ABIDES IN DEATH. IF IT ABIDES IN DEATH IGNORANTLY, THE LORD FORGIVES AND KEEPS SHOWING HIS LIGHT TO THAT SOUL. IF THAT SOUL KEEPS REJECTING HIS LIGHT AND TRUTH AND ABIDES IN DARKNESS AND DEATH DESPITE THE LIGHT AND TRUTH SHOWN, IF IT KEEPS WALKING ON ITS OWN WAY, THAT SOUL WILL BE JUDGED AS “UNWORTHY OF GOD AND OF HIS KINGDOM”. (1Thess. 2:12// 2Thess. 1:5)

We may see the Son of God in front of us even with our natural eyes and not recognize Him and not believe! (Jn. 6:36) Similarly, after we have believed in Him, we may see His Word with our natural eyes and not recognize the Truth in His Word and thus not believe the Truth! This may prove fatal to our destiny, if we, by our own free will, choose not to see and not to believe His Full Truth.

We must now repeat the fact where it is important for us all to see, understand and believe that all three parts of our being must die and be resurrected, that is to say, our SPIRIT, SOUL and BODY. We may omit our BODY from the further consideration since it will be resurrected “automatically” and without any work of faith on our part. Every human being will receive a new body, whether he had done good or evil, whether he will be living at that time or be dead, whether he will be saved or damned. (Jn. 5:28,29)

Let us devote the next paragraphs to our SPIRIT and SOUL and the SUFFERING OF BELIEVERS in their SPIRIT and SOUL. The spiritual believers undergo two kinds or two “stages” of sufferings, namely:

1) They suffer when their own flesh is being burnt by the FIRE of circumstances and trials (1Pet. 4:12) and crucified on their own cross. These sufferings are never pleasant, they can be very painful, but they are absolutely unavoidable in the life of any believer since our sinful nature cannot be destroyed without them. We either suffer before we die physically or we will suffer (much more) after we die physically (see more later).

2) After they are sufficiently crucified, the spiritual believers then suffer for the sake of others whenever they are engaged in ministering to them or helping them in the same process of their transformation. It may appear as a paradox, but this suffering may be greater and deeper than when they suffered for their own flesh. Also, **1Pet. 4:12** applies here as well when their fiery trial may now be arranged by the flesh in their brethren. They are now beginning to suffer the sufferings of Christ, the righteous for the unrighteous; a totally different kind of suffering where, AND ONLY WHERE, the spiritual believers begin to acquire grace and the fruit of the Spirit. They are to rejoice in these sufferings! (**1Pet. 4:13 // Acts 5:41**) It is in this stage when the spiritual believers are beginning to SEE and “*know the power of His resurrection and the fellowship of His sufferings, being made conformable to His death*”. (**Phil. 3:10**)

We note that the soulish, carnal believers are also suffering and sometimes more than the spiritual ones! But there is a great difference in the sufferings of these two kinds of believers. The sufferings of the soulish, carnal believers are the same as sufferings of pagans; they never end and never accomplish what they should accomplish – a new creature. The spiritual believers are led by the Spirit THROUGH THE FIRE AND THROUGH THEIR CROSS; they emerge on the other side into Life everlasting as new creatures. That is the narrow way! (**Mt. 7:14**) The carnal believers and pagans never get out of their fires and sufferings or beyond their crosses! They are like those circus horses that run around the stage and never get anywhere.

Let us now consider the Scriptural fact of our TWO deaths and TWO resurrections as touching our SPIRIT and SOUL. It presupposes the existence of TWO CROSSES and thus TWO MIRACLES OF OVERCOMING DEATH BY LIFE. This part of the MOST IMPORTANT ISSUE is discussed in the Light of the Scripture in the following Chapter. It will also be discussed in Chapter 4 in some of its points where an example of the children of Israel and their journeys with their spiritual meanings is presented.

* * *

Before we proceed to the next Chapter, I am compelled in my spirit by the Lord to state the following.

There are believers, ministers, pastors, evangelists, preachers or Christian friends who say to me that my writings are “heavy” and are written in a sharp, judgmental spirit. **THEY ARE RIGHT!** My writings are “heavy” for any natural soul to absorb, even to read. The majority of believers naturally prefer a *“lighter literature, a more palatable Christianity”*. But reading interesting religious literature is just another desire of a natural religious soul because it is satisfied by it and not threatened. To cuddle up in an easy chair and read an interesting religious story is not exactly a crucifixion process, rather, it is a preservation process. I am not saying that we should never cuddle up in an easy chair and read a good book or engage in leisurely activities, but not to the exclusion of our spiritual maturing process which at times may be rather painful.

* * *

Now, these are not my judgments; rather, they are the LORD’S JUDGMENTS AND HIS SHAKING of the Earth and of Heaven, which includes His Church. And this is His further GRACE and LOVE for His Church, where many might otherwise not make it to be His Bride without spot or wrinkle or any blemish! (**Eph. 5:27**) In fact, the House of God is the first to be judged (**1Pet. 4:17,18**) and this book is a small part of this Shaking and Judgment of the Lord. (**Heb. 12:25-29**) The Word He gives us now, the same shall judge us in the last day and we, believers, are sifting ourselves now by our own decisions, our belief or unbelief. (**Jn. 12:47,48**)

THE PURPOSE of this shaking and sifting done by the Lord even now before our very eyes is to separate all that is REAL from all that is UNREAL, ARTIFICIAL; to separate that which is DEAD from that which is LIVING; to separate all those who are WILLING TO SEEK GOD and His Truth from all those that are NOT WILLING TO SEEK GOD, rather, they close their eyes and hearts to the Truth. (**Mt.**

13:15// Acts 28:27// Ps. 10:4,5) This is what the LORD is doing and not any man on this earth. Yet, the Lord is doing it also through His true servants, whom He sovereignly prepared for this day and hour... and by His Grace and sovereign calling, I am one of them. Hence, I cannot care what people think or feel about me or how they judge me and my ministry. It is the Lord, Who called me and chose me, not any man. (**Jn. 15:16**) He will judge me how faithfully and diligently I fulfilled His calling for this ministry of His Judgments and Shaking. So, if you do continue on your own “palatable, comfortable or entertaining religious road”, you will have no excuse before the Lord that He did not warn you! But when the testing comes with all its fury, many believers shall not stand, but shall fall.

The chief Purpose and Objective of this Judgment for the Lord is that He may obtain hearts and souls that will not be moved, shaken, removed, uprooted or fall, but that SHALL STAND against all the forces of evil and darkness and these shall not prevail against them in any way! (**Eph. 6:13**) THAT shall be the true testimony to His Glory and Power. This is the true Remnant.

THE CAUSE of this shaking and sifting is the UNWILLINGNESS of believers to pause, ponder, meditate, seek, believe, receive and do what God clearly requires from them before the end of this world comes. Too many believers do not even seek the Kingdom and its righteousness first (**Mt. 6:33**). They don't seek Truth and are unwilling to meditate on what the Lord brings before their eyes and ears and to sift the lies and deceptions from the Truth. Many leaders are unwilling to be shown by the Lord that they are not infallible and **“do err from the truth”** and refuse to be converted and corrected. (**Jam. 5:19**) They keep preaching lies and leading ignorant believers to perdition as it is written:

“FOR THE LEADERS OF THIS PEOPLE CAUSE THEM TO ERR; AND THEY THAT ARE LED OF THEM ARE DESTROYED.” (Is. 9:16)

It is true that the above Word of God is found in the Old Testament, but there is no difference between the Old

and New Testament leaders since the human fallen nature is the same in both Testaments. This Word applies to the Church as much as it applied to Israel because the leaders of either Israel or the Church were always exposed to pride. This pride binds them and makes them captives to the deceptions of the devil and prevents them to see and receive the truth wherever they err from it. Now the Lord allows such ministers to mislead others and live in error in order to see how many souls are indifferent to the Truth, comfortable in their lies and how many truly seek the Truth. Do you see this? No natural soul can see this.

This present time is the time of reckoning and judgment, of shaking and sifting, it is NOT the time for a false comfort, seeking own prosperity and for continued walking on our old, sinful, fleshly, carnal, natural, religious ways of our pride, foolishness, envying, strife and divisions. (1Cor. 3:3) As the AXE (Lord's Judgment) was laid at the root of the trees (people) before Our Lord's first Coming, so it is also laid now, before His next Coming; therefore...

“every tree (man) which does not bring forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire.” (Mt. 3:10,12; 7:17-20// Jn.15:6 - see more details later)

If the WORD OF OUR LORD declared and discussed in this book is not strong enough, persuasive enough, piercing our soul enough to consider going on our knees before Him and pleading for His Grace for us at this time, then nothing else will help us! It may be that the Lord has to allow many believers to *“sink to the very bottom of their religious pit”* before they would be able to begin TO SENSE the very instinct of their self-preservation. Many believers may have to experience evil, hell and pressures of this life to a far greater depth than ever before so that they would “wake up” and make a truthful decision for the Lord; that they would appeal for His Grace, Mercy and His further Patience and Forgiveness. The religious “stupor” may be so strong in many believers that they simply do not care for anything anymore. They may not know what to believe any more. They just exist until their demise. What a TRAGEDY OF BELIEVERS!

They may have never acquired any true SPIRITUAL SENSE during their Christian life that would have made them sensitive to the Spirit of God in their spirit and soul.

Our spiritual sensitivity always enables us to know whether we are right or wrong, what is from God and what is not, what to do and what not to do, what to say and what not to say, how to minister and how not to minister, and that totally SEPARATELY from what our mind thinks or what our heart feels or how we mentally understand all the facts! Unfortunately, the vast majority of believers do not have this spiritual sense; rather, they walk, talk, act, minister and live as their mind thinks and as their heart feels and as they mentally understand all the “facts”. THEY WALK BY THEIR SOUL AND NOT BY THEIR SPIRIT.

The way of spiritual believers is not the same as the way of soulish, carnal believers and these two ways do not lead to the same place. If we do not see it today or are unwilling to see it, the Lord is coming to show us this Truth and His Judgment in a few years.

* * *

The Lord desires to add an important Word to the leadership in His Church, to those many leaders that will receive this book. The Lord requires that they would read it, consider it and bring it before Him so that He may grant them the eye to SEE, that is, the faith to believe it. Also, they ought not to keep it away from anyone in their congregations and thus prevent believers from seeing His Truth and be prepared to enter the Kingdom of Heaven.

THIS IS A SOLEMN WARNING OF THE LORD FOR ALL THE “WATCHMEN” IN HIS CHURCH LEST HIS WORD IN **Ez. 3:17-21** and **Mt. 23:13** should be used against them at the day of their judgment.

And as there was the voice crying in the physical wilderness: **“PREPARE YE THE WAY OF THE LORD, MAKE HIS PATHS STRAIGHT” (Mt. 3:3b)**, so also there are voices in the spiritual wilderness of this world and of this Church that cry

today: *“PREPARE YOURSELVES FOR THE LORD, MAKE YOUR SOULS HOLY AND BLESSED”*.

Because today it is not so much the “Way of the Lord” that is to be prepared, but the “Bride of the Lord” that is to be prepared. We ought to see and understand and believe that the midnight cry ***“Behold, the Bridegroom is coming; go ye out to meet Him”*** has already started some time ago, we are not waiting for it in the future! That is why the clock shows the time passed midnight (see book cover). The virgins are supposed to begin to rise up now and trim their lamps. (Mt. 25:6,7) The time is very short.

Do we have the ear to hear? THAT IS THE MOST IMPORTANT QUESTION.

CHAPTER 4

TWO CROSSES

Never in my Christian life have I witnessed any effort made to clearly explain, teach or preach one of THE MOST IMPORTANT FACTS AND TRUTHS of the New Testament. That fact is the following.

FOR EVERY MAN IN THIS WORLD, WHO IS TO BE SAVED AND PERFECTED –MADE A SON/DAUGHTER OF GOD– THEN LIVE ETERNALLY IN HIS PRESENCE AND SERVE HIM FOR EVER, GOD ESTABLISHED TWO CROSSES:

1) ONE (PHYSICAL AND SPIRITUAL) CROSS FOR HIS SON, JESUS CHRIST, THROUGH WHOSE DEATH, BLOOD AND RESURRECTION EVERY MAN IN THE WORLD COULD BE REDEEMED TO GOD, HIS PRICE PAID IN FULL, HIS SINS AND TRESPASSES FORGIVEN, HIS SPIRIT REVIVED TO GOD'S LIFE AND HIS WAY BACK TO GOD OPEN AGAIN. (**1Tim. 4:10**) THROUGH THIS CROSS, GOD WOULD RECEIVE PEOPLES THAT WOULD BE WILLING TO BELIEVE, REPENT AND BE BAPTIZED AND THUS BECOME HIS POSSESSION. THESE BELIEVERS WOULD ALL BE GIVEN THE POWER TO BECOME HIS SONS AND DAUGHTERS IN HEAVEN. (**Jn. 1:12**) ON HIS CROSS JESUS, THE SON OF MAN, DENIED HIS OWN WILL CONCERNING HIS CUP AND FULFILLED THE WILL OF HIS FATHER. (**Mt. 26:39**, more later)

2) ONE (SPIRITUAL) CROSS FOR EACH REDEEMED AND BAPTIZED BELIEVER TO CONVERT HIM FROM A SOULISH BELIEVER TO A NEW SPIRITUAL BELIEVER, FROM AN OLD NATURAL MAN, TO A NEW SPIRITUAL MAN, FROM AN EARTHLY BELIEVER TO A HEAVENLY SON/DAUGHTER OF GOD THAT WILL PLEASE GOD AND WILL BE DWELLING WITH HIM IN THE NEW HEAVEN.

THIS IS THE TRUE PURPOSE OF GOD FOR MAN. (**Rom. 8:29**) ON THE CROSS OF CHRIST, WE DID NOT DO ANY WORK OF FAITH. ON OUR CROSS WE MUST OVERCOME OURSELVES, DENY OUR WILL AND FULFILL THE WILL OF OUR FATHER BY THE WORKS OF OUR FAITH AND WILL. (**Mt. 16:24,25**). ON OUR CROSS WE BECOME TRUE OVERCOMERS.

The physical Cross of Jesus Christ is so well known that we do not need to devote time to this basic fact of the Bible. The cross for each believer is almost UNKNOWN, misunderstood and not considered with any sufficient importance that it has for every one of us, for our Eternal life or condemnation! Let us, therefore, devote the necessary time and space to our own cross and let us open our heart and spirit to the Spirit of the Lord to show His Light and Truth.

The basic Word of God revealing OUR PERSONAL CROSS is in **Mt. 16:24** where the Lord speaks to His disciples very clearly:

“IF ANY ONE (BELIEVER) WILL COME AFTER ME, LET HIM DENY HIMSELF AND TAKE UP HIS CROSS AND FOLLOW ME.”

It is immediately apparent from this Word of God that without denying our SELF, which is the STRONGHOLD OF SIN IN OUR REDEEMED SOUL, and taking up our cross, we cannot follow the Lord where He went or where He is going. After His Resurrection, the Lord ascended to Heaven. It means that we will not be able to follow Him to Heaven, if we do not deny ourselves and take up our cross daily. (**Lk. 9:23**) Furthermore, in the very next verses (**Mt. 16:25,26**), the Lord tied our cross to either losing our life (old soul) or finding our life (new soul)! It corresponds to walking on the broad way which leads to destruction (loss of life) or on the narrow way, which leads to Life Eternal... and, again, this road we must find. (**Mt. 7:13,14**) So then, denying our SELF and taking up our cross IS walking on the narrow way. This explains the extreme importance of our cross.

**IF OUR CROSS WERE NOT NECESSARY OR IMPORTANT,
THE LORD WOULD HAVE NEVER MENTIONED IT IN
HIS WORD AND TIED TO IT THE LOSING OR GAINING
OF OUR SOUL – OUR OWN LIFE!**

The Cross is always associated with suffering, pain, destruction of something that is to die. Denying of self is the same; it produces suffering, pain and destruction of the old

natural life of our soul, which is our “flesh”, and is to die on our cross. WHAT HAS NOT DIED CANNOT BE RESURRECTED into something new, completely different and hitherto non-existent... a brand new creature. (2Cor. 5:17// Gal. 6:15)

We must **die** to (be separated from) our unrighteous and wrong thoughts, prejudices, wrong beliefs and convictions; **die** to our stubbornness and high-mindedness which are most apparent in our old unrenewed mind; **die** to all spirits of darkness and evil that dwell in our soul, guide it, influence it, and may even govern it WHILE THAT SOUL IS REDEEMED! There is no way that such a natural, uncrucified soul would be acceptable to God and that He would be pleased to have it in His Presence. It took only one sin of foolishness and one of disobedience for Adam to be banished from God’s Presence. (Gen. 3:24a// Pr. 24:9)

NO PAGAN should ever hope that he can bypass the Cross of the Saviour and be somehow accepted by God to Heaven and into His Presence because he was a “good man”. Equally, NO BELIEVER should ever hope that he can bypass his own cross and be accepted by God into His Presence because he was a “good Christian”! THE OLD IN EVERY BELIEVER MUST DIE WHETHER IT IS EVIL OR “GOOD”.

Let me, at this point, reassure believers about a very important spiritual fact and truth which is the following: (1) walking on the broad way which leads to destruction, (Mt. 7:13) (2) evading their cross, (Lk. 9:23) (3) failing to deny their self during their earthly life, (Mk. 8:34b) (4) even being thrown into outer darkness after their physical death where there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth, (Mt. 8:12) etc., ALL THE ABOVE DOES NOT CONSTITUTE THE LOSS OF THEIR SALVATION AT THAT TIME! But it MAY result in the loss of their Salvation later on during the 1,000 years of the Kingdom of Heaven on earth. We will return to this issue later on.

The soulish, carnal Christians do not see this fact; they do not see the need for two crosses though it is clearly declared by the mouth of Our Lord and clearly recorded in the Scripture. They do not see that in addition to our faith,

we must have our self-will subdued to the Will of Our Father. They do not see that our will must bow to His Will and good pleasure without murmurings and disputings and speculations. They do not see that God is working in us toward this, His Purpose. (Phil. 2:13,14) They do not see that without doing the Will of Our Father, they shall not enter into the Kingdom of Heaven no matter how “good Christians” they were, what good deeds or how many of them they had done or how spectacular ministries they had built and performed. (Mt. 7:21-23// Lk. 13:24-30)

They do not see that whenever they are trying with their best intentions to “do good, evil is present with them” since it is a law of the natural creation. (Rom. 7:21) They do not see that this natural creation itself must be destroyed with the evil rooted in it, so that that law is also destroyed with it. They do not see that nothing is crucified by sermons, teaching, preaching, studying, not even by praying (unless the prayer leads to their confession and a true repentance), but only by taking up their cross by their own will and by the power of the Spirit of God. They simply do not see that...

THE CROSS ALONE DESTROYS ALL THAT IS ABHORRENT AND UNACCEPTABLE TO GOD. ALL OUR KNOWLEDGE OF THE TRUTH, ALL OUR FAITH, WISDOM, WORKS FOR THE LORD AND EFFORTS WILL NEVER DO IT.

THE CROSS ALONE OPENS THE DOOR TO ALL THAT IS NEW AND PLEASING AND DESIRABLE FOR GOD. WITHOUT THE CROSS OF JESUS CHRIST AND WITHOUT OUR OWN CROSS, THE FINAL PURPOSE OF GOD IN HIS SALVATION OF MAN CANNOT BE ACHIEVED! WITHOUT OUR CROSS WE CANNOT BE CHANGED INTO THE IMAGE OF HIS SON! (Rom. 8:29)

Another truth is that **none of us desires** to take up our cross or deny our self. Nobody will “talk us into it” or “preach us into it” or “teach us into it” or “persuade us into it” or even “force us into it”! So, how shall we take up our cross? By gradually learning obedience by the things which we will have to suffer... here a little obedience and there a little obedience; the same as with learning, line upon line...

line upon line... precept upon precept... precept upon precept, living experience upon living experience. (Is. 28:10) The Son of God Himself had to learn obedience by the things which He suffered. (Heb. 5:8) How much more must we learn? We should not even dream about being changed into His Image just by attending “church services”, singing and giving offerings (more later on).

Whenever one great power is totally replaced by another great power, it is never accomplished without “side effects” which are commonly called a “battle” or “war”. We will also face situations (battles) in our salvation process (war) whereby one great power is replaced in us by another one as we are being changed into His Image, where we will be equally able to say “... *nevertheless, Father, not my will, but Thine be done*”. (Lk. 22:42b) This is the ultimate denial of our self, of our will. Without learning this obedience “line upon line, precept upon precept” for some years, we will never be able to say to Our Father: “NEVERTHELESS...”

A very important aspect of our cross is also the following. We must see and understand that GOD WILL NOT DO EVERYTHING FOR US! GOD HAD DONE EVERYTHING FOR US WHAT WAS HIS PART TO DO and He does not have to add to it or subtract from it.

But we must start SEEING, understanding and believing in our heart and spirit what GOD decided to do Himself and what GOD decided to be OUR PART TO DO IN HIS COVENANT, WHAT MAN MUST DO FOR HIS OWN SALVATION!

THERE ARE VERY IMPORTANT THINGS IN OUR SALVATION WHICH ARE CLEARLY OUR PART TO DO AND WHICH GOD WILL NEVER DO FOR US! THEY MUST BE DONE BY US! AND IF THEY ARE NOT DONE BY US, THEY ARE NOT DONE! PERIOD. AND THE HOLY SPIRIT IS GUIDING US TO THIS TRUTH AND TO THESE THINGS FIRST. THIS IS NOT MY PERSONAL STATEMENT TO THE CHURCH, THIS IS THE WORD OF GOD TO THE CHURCH AND IT IS WRITTEN IN HIS WORD VERY, VERY CLEARLY (see also nine clear examples from the Word of God below).

NO BELIEVER, IRRESPECTIVE OF PERSONS, WILL HAVE ANY EXCUSE BEFORE THE JUDGMENT SEAT OF CHRIST WITH REGARD TO THE SPIRITUAL TRUTHS AND FACTS IN HIS WORD. (Rom. 2:11; 14:12// Col. 3:25)

Read the WORD and consider IT in your heart and mind very carefully... your LIFE depends on IT.

It is entirely possible that we might have missed some truly vital truths in the Word or misinterpreted them very, very badly. You see, there is a great power in this Universe that "helped us" and keeps helping us very effectively to do these misinterpretations. It is in his interest and it is his job! The Spirit desires to give us some important examples from the Word of God which He inspired to be written and where the action is on **US** and **NOT** on **GOD**. When you do not perform your part, you judge what may happen to you.

1) **2COR. 7:1b** – ***“...let US cleanse ourselves from all filthiness of the flesh and spirit, perfecting holiness in the fear of God.”*** It is not written: *“and God will cleanse us from all filthiness of our flesh and will perfect our holiness while we do nothing, just believe”*. Oh NO! WE HAVE TO DO IT with His power and guidance. The main work of our faith in this, and in all the other points below, is *CONFESSION* and a *TRUE REPENTANCE* which will deliver us from our filthiness and will bring forth in us a different fruit, acceptable and pleasing to God, the fruit that shall REMAIN.

2) **EPH. 4:22** – ***“That YOU put off concerning the former conversation the OLD man, which is corrupt according to the deceitful lusts.”*** It is not written: *“since God had crucified your old man on the Cross of Christ, therefore, now you need to do nothing more”*. Oh NO! WE HAVE TO DO IT with His power and guidance now that we and our old man exist and we live in our old man. (**Col. 3:9**)

3) **EPH. 4:23** – ***“And (YOU) BE renewed in the spirit of your mind”***. It is not written: *“and God will renew your mind while you do nothing”*. Oh NO! IT IS OUR RESPONSIBILITY TO DO IT as He gives the necessary light for us to

SEE our old mind, its unrighteous or foolish thoughts, imaginations, darkness or other evil therein.

Do you really believe that God would gladly welcome to Heaven a believer who has a dark mind, full of unrighteous and foolish thoughts (which are sins – **Pr. 24:9**) just because he was redeemed and baptized in water? Really? And if you do not believe it, then how and when will that believer get rid of that dark, foolish and unrighteous mind? Please, be specific and Scriptural! And if you are honest and do not know the answer, then at least believe these nine examples from the Lord.

4) **EPH. 4:24** – **“And that YOU put on the NEW man, which after God is created in righteousness and true holiness.”** It is not written: “and God will put on you your new man while you do nothing... so, just sit at your church services and believe and wait”. NO! God had created our New Man and put him into Christ before we were born. But WE HAVE TO PUT HIM ON NOW THAT WE LIVE, (**Col. 3:10**) and that, by growing up into Christ in all things. (**Eph. 4:15**) Growing up into Christ in all things is our transformation process, which we have already defined and it is our work of faith; it is definitely NOT an easy work... that’s why the majority of believers are avoiding it; there are easier ways.

5) **GAL. 5:24** – **“And THEY that are Christ’s HAVE CRUCIFIED the flesh with the affections and lusts.”** It is not written: “and God had crucified our flesh in Christ so we do not have to do it again”. NO! WE HAVE TO DO IT with His power and guidance on our own cross NOW THAT WE HAVE OUR FLESH AND LIVE IN IT, which flesh is the enemy of God and the field of Satan’s activities, evil plots and deceptions in our soul. Is it really so difficult to understand this simple truth and then believe it and do it?

6) **PHIL. 2:12b** – **“...(YOU) work out your own salvation with fear and trembling.”** It is not written: “God has already saved you and you have nothing more to do in the Salvation of your soul ...just wait on the Lord, you are saved for ever”. This “doctrine” is straight from hell as it squarely

opposes the Word of God which clearly says that THE SALVATION WHICH WE OBTAINED AS A FREE GIFT, WE HAVE TO WORK OUT (OR "INTO" OUR SOUL) NOW WHEN OUR SOUL EXISTS and when we have the power of the Spirit given to us by God for that purpose. (Jn. 1:12) God is waiting for our choices and decisions and cooperation with Him.

7) **1COR. 3:9** – ***"For WE ARE LABOURERS TOGETHER WITH GOD;"*** This Word of God applies to our work in both Lord's vineyards: FIRST IN OUR OWN SOUL (S. Sol. 1:6) AND THEN IN THE SOULS OF OTHERS – **in that order!** It is our part and responsibility to labour with God. In 1Cor. 3:1–4 Paul speaks to the church in Corinth of their carnality and childishness that were the problems in the Salvation of their souls, not in their redemption as believers.

8) **HEB. 6:1** – ***"Therefore leaving the principles of the doctrine of Christ, LET US GO ON unto perfection..."*** It is not written *"Let us stay where we are and repeat the basic doctrines of Christianity and the promises of God for ever."* NO! God says clearly that there must come the time in our Christian life when we ought to leave the principles of the doctrines of Christ, which are a "theory" for our souls and go on and learn to live and apply them in our life! If we do not go on, the Spirit is expressing clearly the danger whereby we may FALL AWAY from our faith in those theoretical doctrines with tragic consequences that may include the loss of our Salvation, as shown previously. (Heb. 6:4-6)

9) **REV. 3:5** – ***"He that OVERCOMES, the same shall be clothed in white raiment and I WILL NOT BLOT OUT HIS NAME OUT OF THE BOOK OF LIFE;"*** It is not written: *"He that believes and is baptized shall be clothed in white raiment"*. NO! Overcoming is one word that may be considered as conclusive of all the works of our faith (stated also in the above examples) which works are ABSOLUTELY NECESSARY for our Full Salvation. They are OUR PART to do and God has been waiting for us to do our parts. Ever since the devil had deceived believers, they are doing nothing!

Let me say immediately that the above nine examples do not exhaust this truth of the Scripture. They have been chosen as the most typical and clear examples to see and comprehend even with our natural eyes, understanding and common sense.

Let us now summarize this very important aspect of our own cross and declare the following.

GOD HAD ESTABLISHED ALL HIS PRINCIPLES THAT GOVERN BOTH HIS PHYSICAL CREATION AND ALSO HIS SPIRITUAL CREATION. THE SPIRITUAL CREATION INCLUDES THE SALVATION OF MAN. HIS PRINCIPLES APPLY TO EVERY CREATURE AND NO CREATURE CAN CHANGE THEM OR IGNORE THEM WITHOUT SERIOUS CONSEQUENCES OR EVEN DEATH, PHYSICAL DEATH AND ALSO SPIRITUAL (ETERNAL) DEATH.

Let us consider one such clear example, which is found in **Gal. 6:7b,8**:

“...for whatsoever a man sows, that shall he also reap. For he that sows to his flesh shall of the flesh reap corruption; but he that sows to the Spirit shall of the Spirit reap Life Everlasting.”

This Word applies to both physical as well as spiritual sowing and reaping. Furthermore, what we sow, we shall reap later, sometimes much later (when we might have already forgotten what we sowed), and we shall reap 30 or 60 or 100 fold more than we had sown. (**Mt. 13:8**) It does not need any discussion to see that no man can change this Principle of God or negotiate with God about his upcoming harvest. The question rather is: Do we see and realize what we are sowing? NO! We keep sowing something every day of our life. And another question is: Can we later refuse to reap what we had sown? Ponder these two questions.

Let us now SEE that if we don't do the above nine examples, we sow to our flesh! If we do them, even press toward the mark for the prize of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus (**Phil. 3:14**), we sow to the Spirit! If we sow to the flesh, we cannot reap the Life Everlasting. If we cannot

reap the Life Everlasting, but corruption where shall we end up? The End Purpose of our Salvation is LIFE EVERLASTING, NOT CORRUPTION. True?

Do we now SEE the true importance of our cross which is the only place: where we can “work out our own Salvation”; where we can “cleanse ourselves from all filthiness of the flesh and spirit”; where we can “put off our old man, renew the spirit of our mind and put on our new man”; where we can “crucify our flesh with the affections and lusts”? Do we see the depth of deception to which we have been exposed by Satan – the liar and murderer - and its true purpose? Do we see Satan and his foxy and devilish tactics to get us back? Do we truly SEE it? NO! But is God responsible for our blindness?

Adam was the possession of God, he was spiritual in all his being, holy and sinless and had a living fellowship with God when Satan through his tactics and deception got him under his dominance and possession... and us in him! Why then would you think it impossible that Satan could repeat that feat again today with us, who are the “new” possession of God? And while in our souls we are yet unholy and sinful? We are “back to God” and Satan is “back to his deceptive tactics” and we are foolish enough to fall to the same pit again! Why? Because we are PROUD and therefore BLIND and we do like to stay that way. Why would the Lord warn us to fear Satan, just to scare us without any valid reason? (Mt. 10:28// 1Pet. 5:8) The Lord is not talking to pagans. The roaring lion is not walking about pagans, whom he has already devoured. He is walking about born-again baptized believers, whom he has lost! Or so it seems. Do we SEE this fact of our Christian life? I sincerely doubt!

Yes, we can cast all our care upon God for He cares for us (1Pet. 5:7), but we may not care for Him and His Word! We expect God to do for us verse 7, while we do not do verses 5 and 6! The younger are not submitted to the elder, we are not subjected to one another, we are not clothed with humility, we do not humble ourselves under His mighty hand; so, remaining proud, stubborn, self-righteous

and disobedient to His Word, God resists us and gives Grace and care unto the humble. (1Pet. 5:5) If our part of the Covenant is not done, how do we expect God to do His part? Do we SEE this? NO! Do we care to do our part of the Covenant? NO! Shall we change our old ways? We must.

No believer should ever hope for or expect God to come down and take all his decisions and choices for him and give him all the right desires and right thoughts and right plans while the believer does nothing. So, God will not fulfill such imaginations or wishes of ours, if we do not fulfill our part in His Word! But, He will guide us into the right way and also strengthen us. So, it is not first "CHRIST WILL DO ALL THINGS THROUGH ME", rather, it is first "I CAN DO ALL THINGS THROUGH CHRIST..."! (Phil. 4:13a)

Yes, we should be "anxious for nothing" and should make our requests known unto God... and the peace of God, which passes all understanding, shall keep our hearts and minds through Christ Jesus. (Phil. 4:6,7) Now, how on earth do we want to do this Word without our cross? Every request that we make in our natural, uncrucified soul is through anxiety because anxiety, like sin, is deeply rooted in the "flesh" and nature of our soul. Our natural soul continually lives in anxiety and fears whether we are aware of it or not; and our unrenewed mind cannot be "stayed on God" and trust God, therefore, God cannot keep it in any peace. (Is. 26:3) Do we, again, SEE that without destroying our anxiety and fears on our cross, we cannot hope to do this Word of God and achieve His peace?

These are just two simple examples showing how easily we can misunderstand and misapply the Word of God and ignore His Covenant with us! And then some believers might even claim that the Word does not work. It does, we don't work.

We can summarize that in our natural soul we cannot do any part of the Word of God and expect God to do His part while we do not do our part. His Covenant with us has two parties to it and our part has not been obliterated by

God... but it was by Satan, the Deceiver, and that, directly or through his servants in the Church.

I believe that you do not have to be William Shakespeare in order to read and understand the King James Bible. Its English is clear even to our physical eyes. If God says that “YOU put on your new man”, then, clearly YOU HAVE A TASK TO DO and cannot afford to ignore it; **IT IS NOT AN OPTION!** If YOU do not put on your new man (life) YOU will remain in your old man (life) and YOU will lose your life! (Mt. 16:25) And YOU will get nowhere near where you hoped to get or planned to get after your death or rapture. Am I speaking to you a mystery or is this complicated? How do you see these simple examples in “seeking the Truth of God”? Is it painful? Yes, it is! Before the Reality becomes sweet, it is always painful!

I am only declaring on these pages the light and vision that I have received from the Lord, and their spiritual meaning. I am writing nothing else and nothing of myself. You do not have to believe me, and I will not try to persuade you about anything. I am writing it because the Lord has called me to write it and to publish it... whether people like it, or not. The Lord gives us His Light and Truth whether it pleases us or disturbs us. If you have any problem with any statement on the pages of this book, please, turn to the Lord, since He should be living in your spirit also; go on your knees and enquire of Him! I have no doubt that He would show you the same Light and Vision, and your heart would begin to understand what it may have never understood before. And your eyes would see what they may have never seen before in your entire Christian life. This is also my personal experience with the Lord.

Until we SEE what God sees, we cannot understand it, because we can never understand what we cannot see. Is that true?

Let me conclude this important issue of SPIRIT and SOUL by saying that we cannot do any of the truths described on the pages above in our OWN power and wisdom,

because we have no power and no wisdom for this kind of work. NOTHING IN THE NEW TESTAMENT CAN BE DONE BY THE NATURAL SOUL OF MAN. Here Our Lord expects from us our WILLINGNESS to do this work through HIS Power and Wisdom. We have to come to Him and ask in faith and co-operate. The Lord has all that we need in order to do it all. However, the LORD WILL NOT DO IT FOR US WITHOUT US, AUTOMATICALLY without our asking, seeking, knocking, praying, fasting, pressing; without our works of faith, without the decisions and consent of our own free will.

Therefore, IF AFTER OUR REDEMPTION WE DO NOTHING, THE LORD DOES NOTHING... except bringing us to His Word and pointing to us OUR part of the Covenant which we ignore. But the fruit of our self-deception may prove shocking and fatal when we are finally “called home” and will SEE OURSELVES AS GOD SEES US. No dead believer has ever come back to describe to us his/her own experiences or surprises. If you do not believe the living testimonies of true living servants of the Lord, you will not believe, if somebody would come up from the dead and testify to the truth. (Lk. 16:30,31)

Before we conclude this important chapter and the spiritual facts discussed therein, let us see what the Lord desires to show us concerning the passages of His Word which we “hate to read, teach, preach, see, understand and do” in order that we may live. These passages include the nine examples described above and also any other parts of His Word where our death, crucifixion of our flesh, putting off the old man, putting on the new man, self-denial and other sufferings are described.

There may be many sincere and honest believers, who have desired to please God and may have tried for many years to do the Word of God also in those “painful and bloody” parts. And so, they tried to “battle their old man, battle the world, battle the hell, battle evil and everything that seemed bad or against God inside or outside of them”. They tried “their best” believing that this was the narrow

way and what the Lord desired from them. Well, not quite so. The true and effective way is quite different.

The Lord desires to show us the following:

1) Our own efforts according to our own imagination, reasoning, feeling, assumption or understanding of our soul to do His Word will not end in any success (this is painful to learn).

2) No man can do anything what he cannot see (this applies in both physical and spiritual world).

3) Since we all started as spiritually blind, the first thing we need is to start SEEING IN SPIRIT... seeing, who we are, what we do, where we are going, what we are supposed to do in His eyes.

4) In order for us to see, we need LIGHT to replace the darkness in our soul. This LIGHT is FAITH through which we can see the substance, the basis of things we hope for, the clear evidence of things not seen by our physical eyes. (**Heb. 11:1**) It is very, very easy to mistake the beliefs of our natural soul for faith! Let us be aware of this danger.

5) We cannot produce FAITH in our soul nor can we receive it from the Lord whenever or wherever we want or in whatever way we might desire it. We receive FAITH by “having an ear to hear” the Word of God (**Rom. 10:17**) and by running the race (or walking the narrow way) set before us by God. (**Heb. 12:1**) When we do the latter, then we go through conflicts, problems, difficulties, pain, suffering, adversities of all kinds, all “designed” by the Lord just for us... because we all need them and they all work together for the good of them that love God. (**Rom. 8:28**) Why do we need them?

Well, reading or hearing truth brings to us its “theory”, mental knowledge, comprehension. Seeing, experiencing truth in our conflicts, problems, suffering, difficulties, pain or adversities brings to us the “living reality” of the truth and faith. How? By “**looking unto Jesus (Who is Truth) the Author (Provider) and Finisher of our faith;**” (**Heb. 12:2**).

If we are looking at the problems, conflicts, troubles, we get no faith and no light from Him! When we “look at Him” we receive HIS understanding, HIS answer for those problems, conflicts, troubles, etc. His answer comes as faith, light, truth. That truth, if we receive it and believe it, has the power to set us free. (**Jn. 8:32**) That also means, free from the effects of those particular problems, conflicts, difficulties, etc. It further means that we may now overcome them by reaching their solutions... through HIS FAITH.

6) When we receive HIS FAITH from Him, we receive LIGHT to SEE ourselves and our situation as He sees it. We SEE the problem or conflict or adversity and the true cause of it; we SEE what must be done that we may “come over” the difficulty and be “over-comers”. We SEE our flesh and the roots of the problems that may be in us or also in others. FAITH also contains the POWER to do the things that we SEE and the FREEDOM to say things that are necessary to be said to resolve the problems and the situation at hand.

7) Hence, we do not fight our old man, our sinful nature, the world, the hell or anything that appears evil, but...

WE FIGHT THE GOOD FIGHT OF FAITH, FIRST TO RECEIVE IT, THEN TO KEEP IT AND THEN TO DO IT. THEREBY WE LAY HOLD ON ETERNAL LIFE WHEREUNTO WE ARE CALLED! (1Tim. 6:12//2Tim. 4:7)

WITH FAITH WE CAN DO ALL THINGS (**Mk. 9:23**) BECAUSE WE SEE WHAT SHOULD BE DONE, HOW IT SHOULD BE DONE AND WHO SHOULD DO WHAT AND WHEN. IF WE DO NOT LIVE IN THE SPIRIT, WE DO NOT LIVE BY FAITH. THEN WE LIVE IN OUR SOUL BY OUR OWN SENSES AS THERE IS NO OTHER WAY TO LIVE. IF WE DO NOT LIVE BY FAITH, WE ARE NOT JUST AND RIGHTEOUS IN THE EYES OF OUR LORD. (**Rom. 1:17**) WE ALL MUST LEARN TO LIVE BY FAITH AS IT IS NOT NATURAL FOR US TO LIVE SO.

WITHOUT FAITH WE CAN DO NOTHING, WE CAN'T PLEASE GOD, (**Heb. 11:6**) WE CAN'T BE REDEEMED. OUR HEART MUST SEE THE RIGHTEOUSNESS OF GOD BEFORE IT CAN BELIEVE IT AND BEFORE OUR MOUTH CAN CONFESS IT. (**Rom. 10:10**)

We may conclude this Light from the Lord as follows:

WE DO NOT DENY OURSELVES AND TAKE UP OUR CROSS, (MT. 16:24) CRUCIFY OUR FLESH, (GAL. 5:24) CLEANSE OURSELVES FROM ALL FILTHINESS OF SPIRIT AND FLESH, (2COR. 7:1) PUT OFF OUR OLD MAN, RENEW THE SPIRIT OF OUR MIND AND PUT ON OUR NEW MAN, (EPH. 4:22-24) MORTIFY OUR MEMBERS WHICH ARE UPON THE EARTH, (COL. 3:5) AND SO ON, AND SO ON... ACCORDING TO OUR IMAGINATIONS, BELIEFS, UNDERSTANDING OR EFFORTS! NO!

FIRST, WE MUST BE WILLING TO SEE OUR OLD MAN, HIS FILTHINESS, DARKNESS, LUSTS, SINFULNESS, WICKEDNESS, HIS TRUE NATURE. WE THEN MUST REPENT AND ASK THE LORD TO REMOVE WHAT WE NOW SEE AND ABHOR AND HATE JUST AS HE HATES IT. THIS IS WHAT WE DON'T WANT TO DO OR WE ARE UNABLE TO DO BEING HELD BY THE POWERS OF EVIL.

OUR TRUE CONFESSION AND REPENTANCE IS OVERCOMING – IT IS DENYING OUR SELF, IT IS TAKING UP OUR CROSS, IT IS CRUCIFYING OUR FLESH, IT IS CLEANSING OURSELVES FROM ALL THE FILTHINESS OF SPIRIT AND FLESH, IT IS APPREHENDING THE LIFE ETERNAL, IT IS THE TRUE PROCESS OF OUR SALVATION.

We cannot abhor or hate and thus repent of anything that we do not SEE. Hence, we need faith to see, which faith is the spiritual evidence of the true nature of our old man not seen by our natural eyes! But we must see what it is to be able to hate it, abhor it and repent and turn from it. (Heb. 11:1) This is our deliverance, our crucifixion, the denial of our old man, our transformation to the Image of Jesus Christ, the true Salvation of our SOUL.

So, let us see and understand that...

THE TRUE SALVATION OF OUR SOUL IS ALL DONE BY OUR SEEING (our faith), OUR CONFESSION AND THEN REPENTANCE (our work of faith) WHICH IS OUR PART TO DO, AND BY THE GRACE AND POWER OF THE LORD WORKING IN US MIGHTILY WHICH IS GOD'S PART TO DO IN OUR SALVATION!

Four times has Our Lord commanded us in His Word saying: **“the just SHALL (not SHOULD) live by faith”**. (Hab. 2:4//Rom. 1:17// Gal. 3:11// Heb. 10:38). Why? Is it sin for us not to live by faith? YES, it is sin for us! (Rom. 14:23b) And so, we may be sinning daily.

To LIVE BY FAITH means TO LIVE BY THE SUBSTANCE THAT ORIGINATES IN HIS SPIRIT AND DOES NOT ORIGINATE IN MAN’S NATURAL SOUL! Faith is not a part of our soul, it is not produced by our soul, but it comes to our heart from our conscience which is in our spirit. We are to live through our spirit as Christ lived all His earthly life and ministry. Our thoughts, and logical or intellectual beliefs and convictions based on our thoughts, are not faith! Hence, he who lives by faith is a spiritual believer; he who lives by everything else is a soulish believer. There is a world of difference between the faith provided or authored by the Lord (Heb. 12:2) and our own soulish beliefs and convictions. We repeat that it is very easy to confuse true faith with our soulish beliefs. We can know true faith and distinguish it from soulish beliefs by their fruit and consequences. So, we usually learn the difference between the true faith and our own convictions by our living experiences.

OUR PAIN AND SUFFERING WILL BE IN OUR WILLINGNESS TO SEE THE TRUTH ABOUT OURSELVES AND NOT KEEP OUR EYES, EARS AND HEART CLOSED TO IT. (Mt. 13:15// Acts 28:27) OUR WILLINGNESS TO CONFESS AND REPENT AND THEN COOPERATE WITH THE SPIRIT ON THE ESSENCE OF OUR REPENTANCE TO PUT IT INTO OUR PRACTICAL LIFE, WILL BE OUR TRUE CROSS AND PAIN AND SUFFERING AND OVERCOMING AND TRANSLATION FROM THE SOULISH TO THE SPIRITUAL.

Yet, who received the Light and confessed it? When we see the Light-Grace and reject it, we are judged guilty and condemned. That is why any man, who believes not on the Son of God is condemned already! (Jn. 3:18-21)... because that Light-Grace was shown to all men! (Tit. 2:11// Ps. 98:3b) And he that believes in his heart and confesses it with his mouth is redeemed already and he shall be saved.

(Rom. 10:9,10) That is also why the “heart of unbelief” is called evil by God Himself. Such a heart may either keep us away from our own Redemption or cause us to depart from the Living God after our Redemption! **(Heb. 3:12)** It has the power to reject what God desires or what He offers to us.

Our Lord Jesus Christ desires that we would consider this Chapter very diligently and with all seriousness as it is THE CORE OF THE MOST IMPORTANT ISSUE presented in this book.

If we reject this clear Light and Grace of the Scripture concerning the two crosses, we reject the Main Purpose of the Will of God in transforming us into the Image of His Son. If we pause, ponder and start believing the clear Word of God, then we may go to the next Chapter and start pondering other and also deeper spiritual issues which we may have never pondered, never seen to any depth, never understood in any desirable way.

May Our Lord grant us the spirit of ability and wisdom to do so, to acquire the things that HE desires us to have and which we may have even secretly desired in our heart to have, see, understand and live in our earthly life.

CHAPTER 5

PONDERING DEEP SPIRITUAL ISSUES

Can man understand God? Yes he can, in his limits, when he is spiritual and filled with all Fullness of God. (Eph. 3:19)

Our Saviour and Lord always talked to people in a simple but clear way using simple, but clear language which was on their level of understanding and using the objects of everyday life with which they were very familiar. It takes Our Master to show and describe spiritual and unseen facts in clear words while many times we find our words hopelessly inadequate to describe such things.

How can we describe in words our faith to any depth? How can we do it with our deep feelings?... or with movements of our heart and their meaning?... or with many thoughts of our mind as to their true origin or true intent?... or with some decisions of our will? Sometimes we may not know why we decided as we decided, but we did. How can we describe our fears with their origin or true meaning? We often cannot describe the movements within our own SOUL, then, how can we describe any movements within our SPIRIT? This may well lead to a surprising conclusion that WE MAY NOT UNDERSTAND OURSELVES: why we feel as we feel, why we do what we do, why we believe what we believe, why we understand as we understand or why we decide as we decide. Yet, all the answers to such unusual questions can be found deeply in our own spirit.

Let us cease from being wise and prudent and let us become as little children and ponder at least some of the mysterious issues of God as if they were quite “understandable and imaginable”. Can we do it? If we cannot do it then we will not be able to do this pondering because “to cease from being wise and prudent” may be compared to “denying

our self and taking up our cross". You see, Our Father had hid "great issues" from the wise and prudent and has revealed them unto babes! Why? Because it seemed good in His sight. (**Mt. 11:25,26**) Hence, our problem now is to become "as little children" so that we would be "able to receive" into our spirit and soul the revelation from Our Father. This also means that we must "empty our mind and heart" from our preconceived ideas, prejudices, previous intellectual knowledge, reasons, old understanding, beliefs, convictions and the wisdom of educated adults. Can we do it? NO, we can't! But we may be enabled by the Lord to keep these old things "behind bars" for the time being. The Lord will not do it in one minute just before we start reading the paragraphs below, but He may start doing it slowly as we keep reading and opening our heart and mind to Him, to His Spirit.

a) OUR FATHER had created darkness and evil. (**Is. 45:7**) Do we know why He did that? YES, we do! But the natural mind cannot know it because it CANNOT SEE any reason for it. True? Then later on, God created Lucifer, a magnificent angelic being full of wisdom and beauty and perfect in all his ways. God created Lucifer KNOWING FULL WELL that he will corrupt himself (**Ez. 28:15,17**) and become Satan, His chief enemy, the father of lies, the destroyer of His Creation; KNOWING FULL WELL that there would be no hope ever for his recovery and Salvation! (**Is. 14:12-15**) Do we know why Our Father had created Lucifer foreknowing all these facts? YES, we do! Can we fathom such facts and SEE Our Father's Character and understand His motives? YES, we can, if His Spirit, which searches the depth of God's Mind shows us. (**1Cor. 2:10**) Is He willing to show us such unfathomable and deep mysteries? YES He is, but only to our New Man, to the Father's son or daughter, never to our natural soul.

Did Our Father ever need Satan in His Plans, Counsels and Purposes? Do we know? YES, we do! Also, Our Father KNEW FULL WELL that He created for Himself and for His Son Jesus Christ a mountain of problems, troubles,

pains and sufferings about which the natural man can have no clue whatsoever. Yet, Our Father did it! How can any human creature face these deep truths and mysteries and not fall on his knees before the Almighty God, Who had become the Father of that human creature, of his soul and of his spirit **PRECISELY BECAUSE OF THESE MYSTERIES?**

And how could this PERFECT Lucifer, living and serving God, his Creator in a perfect way, one “day” embrace evil and allow pride and jealousy to enter his heart and mind and will? Do we know why? We may have no clue. There was no need for him to become proud or jealous of God, to become His chief enemy. In his exalted position, intelligence, power, wisdom, beauty and perfection Lucifer was (in my vision) just under the Son of God! He was missing nothing! He had all the happiness, peace, contentment, joy and the “heavenly bliss” that he (or any man on earth) could ever wish for! True? So, why did he embrace evil and become God’s enemy? How could he bypass all his great wisdom? Can we put ourselves into Lucifer’s “shoes”? **NO!** It is far beyond our capacity to even imagine his life in the Presence of the Almighty God let alone try to understand it. We are trying (at least some believers do) to serve God in our sinfulness, weaknesses, foolishness, prejudices, selfishness, speculations, pride, fears and all the rest of it, hoping that we are pleasing Our God. So, how far are we from the kind of service that the perfect and sinless Lucifer had provided to God?

Nevertheless, our poor soul CAN glean from these deep facts and mysteries something very valuable. Lucifer had decided to take this road to tragedy BY HIS OWN FREE WILL, which God gave to His angels, and to man. This proves THE AWESOME POWER OF FREE WILL that God granted to His creatures. By that power we may oppose Him, disobey Him, ignore Him, refuse what He offers and become His enemies... just as Lucifer did! And we may start doing it WITHOUT BEING AWARE OF IT! I can SEE, therefore I believe that Lucifer did not foreknow in himself the awesome power and tragedy of the evil that he was embracing and the tragic

consequences of that step! Had Our Father ever warned him about it? It is not recorded. What is also important for us is to realize that it is equally not recorded that Lucifer was ever given any CHANCE TO REPENT and turn from his evil ways! There has never been forgiveness of God extended to him as it is to man. Why? Is Our Father “selective” in His Grace? Can we truly answer this question? **NO!** We cannot answer it or comprehend it in any way. Yet, it is extremely valuable for us to register this fact for our own Christian life.

And Satan did not commit this great evil alone. He apparently deceived about one third of all the angelic host of Heaven, who later on were cast out of Heaven to the earth together with him. (**Rev. 12:4,9**) Those multitudes of angels had to have been tempted and deceived by Satan and thus they had made the same fateful decision of their free will to embrace evil. They were also holy and sinless and possessing free will. Neither these were given any chance to repent and return to serve God! None of them. The everlasting fire was prepared for Satan and for all his angels right from the very beginning! (**Mt. 25:41**) The everlasting fire was never prepared for man... though many men will end up there as well by their own free will decision. Why?

They have the same power of free will as Lucifer had, to do how they please and what suits them though they are warned about the consequences and about hell. Now, this includes us, born-again and baptized believers, who also possess this awesome power of free will as Lucifer had, to do as we please and what suits us. And we always prefer to do what pleases US and what suits US and not what suits God; and THAT IS OUR TRAGEDY!

Our Saviour and Lord always did those things that pleased His Father, Who sent Him and did not leave Him alone. (**Jn. 8:29**) So, realistically, how far are we from His Likeness? In our natural mind and understanding we can never be like Him because we can never see or imagine ourselves that way.

b) HOW ABOUT MAN? Why had God created man in the first place? Do we know? YES, we do! And why He created him “in His Own Image”? Do we know that also? YES, we do! Our Father does not give us His reasons in the Book of Genesis where He only said “**Let Us make man in Our Image.**” (Gen. 1:26), but we also have Rom. 8:29,30 and Rev. Chpt. 21 and 22. Yet we cannot understand the act of God whereby He created “*male and female*” (Adam and Eve), but called THEIR NAME ADAM... in the singular... and not Adam and Eve! (Gen. 5:2) Do we understand that? The Word in Mt. 19:5,6; 1Cor. 6:16 or Eph. 5:31 may certainly give us a hint, but we still cannot see and comprehend this fact in either physical or spiritual world. Our imagination and the understanding of our natural mind will not help us at all. We cannot possibly fathom such mysteries in our natural soul.

Yet, Our Father does not desire to keep it “top secret” from man, that is, from the man that loves Him, that has given up his life for Him, that desires to serve Him and obey Him and be with Him for ever. It is the delight of Our Father to show THAT MAN all that he is able to see, hear, touch, smell, taste and understand in his spirit. Do we also believe this truth? Our Father will give us His Light about this mystery and we will consider it later on when He will also grant us the Light about the Cross and the Cup of Our Lord, the difference between the two and about the destruction of the works of the Devil by Our Lord. These are also deep mysteries to our soul and to our natural understanding.

c) OUR HEAVENLY FATHER is GOD ALMIGHTY, Who always had everything He wanted, Who never suffered shortages, Who says a Word and it is done, Who can create anything He wants, any time He wants and that, from nothing, just by speaking a Word, Who can do anything and there is nothing too hard for Him to do. (Gen. 18:14 // Jer. 32:27) He has the supreme Power in this Universe and is able to make sure that His Will is always done, and so on. True? YES! This is our simple and logical human understanding and conviction. Are there areas or points in this paragraph where we could also say NO? Yes, there are!

THE WILL OF OUR FATHER IS ALWAYS DONE! BUT WE MAY NOT COMPREHEND HIS WILL OR HIS NEEDS BECAUSE GOD BY THE DECISION OF HIS OWN FREE WILL HAS NEEDS, EVEN UNFULFILLED DESIRES THAT MAN MAY NOT UNDERSTAND.

If we just stay with our human logic, then we must admit that OUR FATHER DELIBERATELY CHOSE to “SUFFER NEED”, “SUFFER PAIN”, to “LOSE WHAT HE DESIRED TO HAVE”, to “SEE HIS CREATION DESTROYED”... the Creation which He declared “very good” and which He loved. He Himself decided to “DESTROY WHAT HE LOVED”, to CREATE A MAN that is able to bring forth a tool for his work and also to CREATE A WASTER that destroys it. (Is. 54:16) Can we fathom that? NO! Yet, it is true and we may find it throughout the Scripture.

IF Our Father had no need of us, we would never exist and I would not be writing this book! True? Being “as a little child”, I can say anything in good faith and with good intention and My Father will understand and correct me, if necessary. All we have to do at this point is to empty ourselves from all that is logical to our natural, educated soul. That includes our selfishness in general, which involves not only our views and convictions but possessiveness in general, holding fast our own views, goals, plans, desires to acquire or to rule. Our Lord Jesus emptied Himself of all this “stuff” and let all those things go. He had decided in His Soul to do nothing of Himself, but only what His Father would show Him to do (Jn. 5:19; 8:28) whether it looked logical or not. Again, how far we are from Our Lord as to His Character and Grace and Love for His Father? Can we fathom it? NO! He became an “unnatural Man” shunning His will, plans, desires, preferences and all those forces that are natural to us and hold us in their grip.

We are thus clearly stepping out of our natural human soul, its reasoning powers and selfishness into His Spirit, Who Alone searches the depth of God and is able to reveal to us what we cannot even imagine. He will not reveal these things of Our Father to any flesh which dwells in us and

may rule our natural soul. If we are to receive anything from Our Father, it must be our New Spiritual Man.

WE MUST ABANDON OUR OWN IMAGE OF OUR FATHER AND OF OUR SAVIOUR AND OF OUR LORD. If we are not willing to do it, then we might as well stop reading this book at this very place. If we cannot do it, then we have to ask Him to enable us to do it. If we will not do it, then we cannot receive from Him the light we need to SEE. Let us therefore continue sitting at the Father's feet as children in hope and faith and in emptying our selves from all the traditional religious stuff that had become our "solitary confinement" and thus the place of our spiritual death.

There is a question which we may ask ourselves and which may be shocking to many; it is the following:

IS SATAN FULFILLING THE WILL OF GOD? YES, OR NO?
--

If we say "no" we are in conflict with the first two paragraphs of this point c). If we say "yes" we would be in conflict with our own understanding of God, with our own sense of righteousness, justification, love, grace, mercy, forgiveness, compassion, goodness of God, etc. True? Is there a third answer? Before we say anything else we must repeat that there are at least TWO BASIC KINDS OF WILL whether that be the Will of God or the will of man. The first basic kind is the PERMISSIVE WILL: DESIRE-PREFERENCE-OBJECTIVE. And the second basic kind is the ABSOLUTE-UNCHANGABLE WILL: THE PRINCIPLE-FINAL JUDGMENT.

If Satan is fulfilling the Will of God, then pagans must also be fulfilling His Will; evil itself must be fulfilling His Will; pain and suffering are fulfilling His Will; death is fulfilling His Will. Judas Iscariot fulfilled the Will of God just as Pharaoh, Herod, King Saul and all the other evil men did. That does not mean that His desires or preferences have been always fulfilled, but His Judgments and Purposes always have. True? God is "**not willing (desiring) that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance**". (2Pet. 3:9)

YET, He accepts the decisions and the destiny of all those that He created for Himself and for His own pleasure though they choose to go their own way and perish. IN HIS PERMISSIVE WILL AND JUDGMENT PEOPLE ARE FREE CREATURES so they have the right to choose what they want. But HIS ABSOLUTE WILL AND JUDGMENT SAYS that no one, who refuses His Word shall live in His Presence. So, in God's Judgment, it is His continued Grace to allow some believers to be even killed or perish temporarily before they would have a real chance to commit, for example, the sin unto death (Mt. 12:31,32// 1Jn. 5:16) or make other fatal decisions and perish eternally. God views our physical death differently than we view it and He may thus use even our physical death for our good.

d) I AM SURE that in myself I am unable to express realities in the spiritual world in any useful way unless I ask My Father for His Wisdom and ability that He gives to us liberally, if we ask Him. (Jam. 1:5) Therefore, let us ask Him believing that He would grant us His additional Grace, Patience, Wisdom and spiritual eyesight that we would be able to SEE and comprehend what our natural soul cannot possibly see and comprehend. Even though our intellect can see and understand some things pondered in this section, it cannot penetrate into, see and comprehend their spiritual depth, their reach and impact on our Christian life and destiny.

OUR HEAVENLY FATHER DID NOT ALWAYS HAVE WHAT HE NEEDED OR DESIRED! When He created Lucifer, He needed him. God never created anything that He did not need. True? Even man in his foolishness does not (normally) create anything what he does not need. But did God also need Satan? YES, HE DID! He needed him for His future Plans and Purposes, because...

<p>THROUGH SATAN GOD WOULD RECEIVE FROM HIS CREATION WHAT HE HAD ALWAYS DESIRED AND SUFFERED FOR!</p>
--

What had God truly desired and suffered for? I SEE that He always desired something much, much more and

much “better” than beautiful and loyal angels or sinless and perfect but naïve men like Adam or men forgiven of their sins or men healed of all their sicknesses or men serving Him in their sincerity, honesty and diligence. You see, if the most perfect and beautiful angel can become God’s enemy, then how much easier can man become one?

But I have to ask you a very important question: HOW CAN YOU BECOME ENEMIES TO SOME ONE WHOM YOU TRULY LOVE? Can you truthfully answer this question? NO, you cannot! And I cannot either. Again, I repeat that the natural man cannot possibly see, understand and thus answer such an important question. Love is also spirit and it needs spiritual discernment and understanding. We will return to this question when we will consider the matter of LOVE. Now we are getting to the next step...

e) SO, GOD CREATED MAN, He created him in HIS OWN IMAGE, male and female He created them. (**Gen. 1:27**) They were innocent and very naïve not knowing what was “good or evil” or what “work” was since everything was provided to them without any need for them to work, sweat or strive.

Then God created the tree of life and also the tree of knowledge of good and evil and put them in the middle of His Garden of Eden. And then He commanded the man NOT TO EAT from the tree of knowledge of good and evil lest he would die the same day. (**Gen. 2:16,17**) Our Father gave this Commandment to Adam and Eve KNOWING FULL WELL THAT THEY WILL EAT OF IT AND WILL DIE! WHY DID OUR FATHER DO THAT? Do we know? **YES**, we do!

But how can GOD, Who in our imagination and understanding and comprehension and feelings IS LOVE and GRACE and MERCY plus all the other Heavenly virtues, how can He cause man, created in His Image, to die and go to hell? Can we understand that? **YES** we do, but not in our natural mind, not even in our wildest imagination. We will now make a statement which natural, soulish believers will consider appalling, yet, in the eyes of Our Father, it is true.

OUR FATHER HAD PURPOSELY EXPOSED MAN TO EVIL AND ALLOWED HIM TO BE SUBMERGED INTO IT AND OVERCOME BY IT AND DIE – BE SEPARATED FROM GOD, HIS CREATOR!

Now, we may follow the above statement with another one, even more shocking statement to the soulish believers.

THEREFORE, IT IS VERY GOOD AND VERY NECESSARY FOR MAN TO GO THROUGH HELL, DARKNESS AND EVIL AND SIN AND PAIN AND SUFFERING AND SICKNESS AND CONFUSION AND PRIDE AND ARROGANCE AND FEARS AND STUPIDITY AND ALL THE “VIRTUES OF HIS FLESH” AND TO EXPERIENCE IT ALL IN HIS SOUL AND LIFE! WHY?

FIRST, SO THAT MAN CAN SEE HIS TRUE SELF AS HE IS WITHOUT GOD, “NAKED” BEFORE HIM AND WHETHER HE LOVES EVIL THAT HE HAS TASTED AND NOW LIVES IT IN HIS SELF, OR WHETHER HE LOVES GOD. AND THEN THE MAN IS GIVEN THE CHOICE TO TURN AWAY FROM EVIL OR REMAIN IN IT, TO CHOOSE LIFE OR CHOOSE DEATH, (**Deut. 30:15**) TO KEEP LOVING HIS SELF OR LOVE GOD MORE THAN HIS SELF. (**Mt. 22:37**)

SECOND, MAN CAN SEE GOD THAT HE SUBMERGED HIMSELF INTO THE SAME EVIL AND GAVE UP HIS OWN LIFE TO PROVIDE MAN WITH ESCAPE FROM EVIL AND DEATH AND FROM HIS SINFUL SELF, AND WHO OFFERS MAN HIS LOVE AND LIFE ETERNAL IN HIS PRESENCE. WHAT WILL THE MAN, WHO BECAME EVIL, CHOOSE? (**Mt. 7:11**) WHAT WILL THIS MAN DO? HOW WILL HIS FREE WILL DECIDE? IT IS SOLELY UP TO THAT MAN AND HIS HEART AND NOT UP TO GOD. GOD IS SEEKING AN UNCONDITIONAL, SPONTANEOUS, FREE-WILL OBEDIENCE AND LOVE FROM THE MAN FOR WHOM GOD (IN HIS SON) DIED!

So, why would the merciful and loving God send you first to hell to die there? And why would He then send His only begotten Son to also die and go to hell and offer you His helping hand and recover you and bring you from hell to

Heaven? WHY? Is there any human logic in it? **NO!** Is there any wisdom of God in it? **YES!**

f) LET US REALIZE that Adam and Eve were naïve not only as to the question of good and evil, but also as to the value, the strength and trueness of their love for God. They took everything for granted and could not imagine that one day they might lose something of it or even lose it all. All the needs for their lives were provided to them by God freely without any need for them to work or even care for it. They had no ability to assess any eventual loss of what they freely enjoyed. I believe that such a thought never even crossed their pure mind. So, because of their ignorance, they lived and enjoyed a true “heavenly bliss on earth”.

But this is **NOT** what God desired and expected from His future sons or daughters, from the future BRIDE OF THE WORD! Their free will, pure mind and heart were to be tested in a most drastic way. We should now see that Satan and evil were perfect tools for achieving that Great Purpose of God for Man as His future Eternal Companion.

We all know the most familiar verse in the New Testament which we were also singing to the tune of “Silent Night”:

“For God so loved the world that He gave His only begotten Son, that whosoever believes in Him should not perish, but have everlasting life.” (Jn. 3:16)

Now, let us realize the background of this truth and the spiritual picture which existed before the foundations of this world. It seems that whatever God created after He had created evil, was in danger of getting spoiled and destroyed. I believe that we can truthfully turn to Our Father and tell Him this:

WE SINCERELY BELIEVE, FATHER, THAT YOU DID NOT HAVE TO GIVE YOUR ONLY BEGOTTEN SON TO SAVE MAN FROM SATAN HAD YOU NOT FIRST GIVEN THE MAN PURPOSELY TO THE HANDS AND POSSESSION OF SATAN!

Now, on what basis can we say such a terrible thing to Our Father? Well, let us continue and see what Our Father will say to it.

BECAUSE WHEN YOU, FATHER, FOREKNOW WHAT MAN WILL DO, HOW HE WILL DECIDE BY HIS FREE WILL, THEN YOU HAVE CREATED MAN TO FULFIL **YOUR** FOREKNOWLEDGE OF HIS OWN FREE DECISIONS!

IN THIS CASE, MAN SHALL EXPERIENCE EVIL, DARKNESS, PAIN, SIN, SUFFERINGS AND DEATH! AND THEN HE MAY EXPERIENCE YOUR LOVE AND GRACE AND MERCY. AND THEN HIS RESURRECTION, ETERNAL LIFE AND HAPPINESS IN YOUR PRESENCE, IF MAN CHOOSES SO BY THE SAME FREE WILL DECISION AND DESIRE BY WHICH HE CHOSE HIS DEATH... THOUGH THIS TIME WITHOUT HIS NAIVETY AND IGNORANCE. THIS TIME MAN WILL KNOW EVIL AND GOOD IN HIS OWN LIFE.

Are we telling Our Father irreverent, embarrassing things? Oh, no! God cannot be embarrassed by truth and what is above and what follows is truth. Let us SEE from the Scripture that...

IT WAS THE WILL OF GOD THAT MAN SHOULD BE SUBMERGED INTO EVIL OF SUCH A MAGNITUDE AND POWER THAT HE WOULD NEVER BE ABLE TO EXTRICATE HIMSELF FROM IT BY HIS OWN POWER, WILL, WISDOM OR OWN ABILITIES! (see details in Chapter 9^[11]) MAN WOULD END UP EXACTLY WHERE LUCIFER HAS ENDED UP AS SATAN! TRUE? DO WE SEE IT?

YET, there is one basic and crucial difference. Lucifer-turned-Satan was not given the chance to repent and be saved; man has been given that chance. Why? One basic reason that I see is that LUCIFER WAS NEVER TEMPTED by any one! On the other hand, man will be purposely exposed to temptations by Satan and allowed to fall. Furthermore, man – now possessed by Satan – will be required to overcome all those great forces of evil and darkness outside and inside of himself BY FAITH (seeing himself) AND BY HIS FREE WILL DECISIONS AND BY HIS WORKS OF THAT FAITH AND

BY THE POWER OF GOD, Who allowed him to fall into that sin and evil and death! And then God would save man from it all by sacrificing His Own Life for the man! Man never knew and experienced THIS KIND OF LOVE from any one anywhere, not even from God as his Creator. Furthermore...

MAN WILL BE REQUIRED TO DO WHAT SATAN AND ALL HIS FALLEN ANGELS COULD NEVER DO, NOT BY HIS KNOWLEDGE OR UNDERSTANDING, BUT BY LOVING GOD WITH THE KIND OF LOVE THAT GOD HAD FOR MAN, BY GIVING HIS OWN LIFE FOR GOD AND FOR BRETHREN AS GOD DID FOR MAN! (1Jn. 3:16)

THIS MAN WILL BECOME THE TRUEST AND THE MOST VALUABLE 'JEWEL' IN THE HANDS AND HEART OF GOD, HIS CREATOR, FATHER, SAVIOUR, LORD AND HUSBAND! (Rev. 21:7,9) **THIS MAN** WILL FULFIL THE FINAL PURPOSE AND DESIRE OF GOD, HIS CREATOR! WILL THIS AFFECT YOUR FUTURE LIFE, DECISIONS, FAITH AND WALK? OR WILL YOU REMAIN THE SAME?

There is a definite Design of Our Father in His everlasting Plans and Counsels with a very definite Eternal Purpose. My only question at this point is: IS OUR FORM OF CHRISTIANITY FULFILLING ANY PART OF THE ABOVE PURPOSE OF GOD TO HIS SATISFACTION? What do you SEE and believe is the true answer to this question?

g) LET US PAUSE for a moment and digest in our spirit, in our conscience and in our heart what has the Spirit shown us thus far. We might keep asking ourselves seemingly many reasonable and logical questions about these spiritual mysteries. I believe we may get the answers in a different, supernatural way.

Let us SEE and understand what the Father has been keeping in His Heart and Mind as a mystery for any human being who is not foreknown and predestinated by Him to be the future Bride and Wife of His Son and His Eternal Companion. It is clearly written in the Word that...

"He that LOVES NOT KNOWS NOT GOD; for GOD IS LOVE". (1Jn. 4:8)

So he that loves not cannot know His Word either because, as we already know very well, the WORD IS GOD. (Jn. 1:1// 1Jn. 5:7) WITHOUT LOVE WE CANNOT KNOW GOD NO MATTER HOW MUCH INFORMATION WE POSSESS ABOUT HIM. This truth must yet penetrate our soul and we must start to SEE it before we are able to believe it. LOVE is the greatest Force-Person in this Universe; it causes us to multiply, to retain God in our being and also keep us in His everlasting Presence.

It is equally clearly written that ***“though I have the gift of prophecy and understand all mysteries, and all knowledge (so I can write books and sermons, teach them, preach them); and though I have all faith, so that I could remove mountains (and build great ministries, churches and seminaries), and HAVE NO LOVE, I AM NOTHING”***. (1Cor. 13:2)

Do we register this truth in our hearts? NO, we don't! Because we do not SEE the reality of ourselves and of our love, we can only try to imagine ourselves and our love.

WE MAY ALL BELIEVE THAT WE HAVE LOVE, and we may thereby say truth. But the all important question is: WHAT KIND OF LOVE do we have and show and live? With our mouth we may show much love, but our heart may go after our covetousness. (Ez. 33:31) In our natural soul we have “natural love” which is NOT the love that God means and seeks and desires from us! Our natural human love is SELFISH; it is NOT the fruit of the Spirit. (Gal. 5:22) It is mostly emotional love seeking pleasure and self-satisfaction; it is not a suffering love, disciplining love (except for some parent's love for children). It is not a commitment of one person to another for the times of adversity, suffering and burden-bearing (Pr. 17:17)... even though couples may have made such promises at the altar. Our natural human love does not bear all things, does not believe all things, does not hope all things, does not endure all things... and does not rejoice in truth. (1Cor. 13:4-8a) Our love can fail and fail miserably and at times rather quickly; it can even change into hatred and separate what it united in the beginning! Since the natural selfish love is not the fruit of His Spirit, it is NOT acceptable

to God. That's why IN OUR NATURAL SOUL WE ARE NOTHING. (Gal. 6:3// Rom. 12:3) Do we see this truth? NO, we don't! Do we believe it? NO, we don't, we can't believe it because we can't SEE it!

How do we know that our "love" is true or not? If we reject any corrections of our errors, if we are offended and pricked by the smallest truth about our unacceptable deeds or reactions, if we insist on our opinions, feelings, convictions even in the face of clear facts that oppose them, etc., then it is pride and stubbornness that is in our soul and not love! In this state we are able to "love" only those that always agree with us, go our way, do not speak truth to us and do not try to correct us, discipline us or give us any advices of any kind. This is a clear proof that our "love" is SELFISH, therefore, it is RUBBISH! Pride, stubbornness, selfishness, the love of our own ambitions, plans, goals, desires and other "virtues" of our flesh cannot possibly coexist with the true love from the Spirit.

How many Christian couples are divorced? And how many live together only for "the sake of their children"? Why? Where has their first "true" love disappeared? And how could it disappear? Do they know? NO, they don't! They have only experienced its disappearance and destruction without necessarily knowing or understanding the spiritual roots or reasons for it and the consequences of it. The most sacred union which God established as the fore-picture of Christ and the Church (Eph. 5:32) is destroyed before our very eyes and we have no power, no ability and no desire to save it. Do you know the true reason for this TRAGEDY? It is OUR PRIDE AND SELFISHNESS! It destroys the spirit of natural love before our very eyes rather quickly and efficiently and we in our natural soul can do nothing about it. We then suffer the consequences and begin living in separation and misery. And then we may continue to "serve God" believing that we are "effective servants of God". (1Tim. 3:4,5) But selfishness, as part of our flesh, is SIN and sin separates, divides and then destroys. SIN separates not only man and wife, but man and God!

The power of evil in pride and selfishness is clearly visible in any divorce and the couple carries the damage thereof for the rest of their life. Do you have your own experiences? Can you do anything about it without God? NO!

IF THERE IS ANY HUSBAND IN THE HISTORY OF MANKIND THAT HAD THE RIGHT TO SEPARATE HIMSELF FROM HIS WIFE IT WOULD BE JESUS CHRIST SEPARATING HIMSELF FROM HIS UNFAITHFUL AND FORNICATING WIFE – THE ISRAEL-CHURCH. HIS FAITHFULNESS AND SACRIFICE SHOWS THAT TRUE LOVE IS PROVEN IN PAIN AND SUFFERINGS AND ENDURANCE AND IN EVIL, NOT IN PLEASANT FEELINGS, NOT IN GOODNESS AND NOT IN LOVING ONLY THOSE THAT LOVE YOU. (Mt. 5:46)

When this book reaches your hand and you are unwilling to send a simple “Thank you” note, what kind of love do you have for me? NONE! This book may have reached your hand, but it had not reached your heart. And even if it reached your heart, it found no love therein. The new Commandment whereby we are commanded by Our Lord to “*love one another as He loved us*” (Jn. 13:34) is being ignored or broken by the whole Church continually and we are not even ashamed of ourselves. We keep stuffing our heads continually with biblical knowledge and understanding, but the Lord can find NO TRUE LOVE in our hearts! Can you truly SEE this fact? NO! Unless you have had the same living experiences as I have, you cannot.

I have many experiences where the believers to whom I ministered personally, expressed their “love”, appreciation and thankfulness to me. But when the truth concerning the fruit of their life was later on declared and it did not please them, they all left me, stopped communicating with me and then they were gone for good. (2Tim. 4:14-16?) Many others repaid evil for my good and accused me of terrible things. Their SIN, selfishness, pride, stubbornness and darkness showed up. The unrestricted power of their great selfishness, and lust for their self-satisfaction, and an absolute disregard even for the basic warnings and Commandments of God in His Word, was for me, without exaggera-

tion, astonishing and unimaginable! They desired THEIR KIND of Christianity, not their own cross. But the Cross is the only thing that unites because it destroys SIN – the chief and most powerful enemy of Love!

We must return to the New Commandment where Our Lord says to us “... **love one another AS I HAVE LOVED YOU...**” NOT AS YOU LOVE ONE ANOTHER with your selfish human love. His love for us was LOVE FROM HIS CROSS. Our love for one another must be from our cross! It must be the fruit that grows from our spirit and not from our flesh. Our Lord is the Master in showing us the kind of love that we have and display in our life by putting us into conflicts, problems, misunderstandings, painful situations, distress, pressures, etc. He points out our errors, our lack of spiritual seeing, sends us His corrections, His discipline, His rebuke... IN HIS LOVE! (Rev. 3:19) How do we handle His corrections, discipline or rebukes? Do we receive them? **NO!** Do we behold them with a great suspicion or contempt? Do we reject them off hand without even pausing and pondering them before Him? Are we immediately offended and pricked? Do we leave the “battlefield”, seek a shelter or look for allies for our self-defense? Do we become silent and do not respond? Do we hide behind our walls of Jericho? What do we do? How do we perform? Can you tell? My reply to this question is one word: MISERABLY! Why? Because...

A VAST MAJORITY OF BELIEVERS NEVER RECOGNIZES HIS CORRECTIONS, DISCIPLINE OR REBUKES AS HIS LOVE AND GRACE FOR THEM! DO WE SEE THIS? NO, WE DON'T!
--

I have a mountain of living experiences concerning this issue and the Lord is my Living Witness because He prepared those experiences and sufferings also for me to test me and my own heart.

* * *

I am constrained by the Spirit of the Lord to insert the following facts concerning TRUE LOVE, its depth and significance as viewed in the spiritual world.

First, let us consider the **AWESOME LOVE** between the Father and His Son, Jesus Christ. The Father loved His Son with an unconditional, unlimited, eternal Love because He had unconditional, unlimited and eternal trust and confidence in His Son. And the Son Jesus Christ loved His Father with the same unconditional, unlimited, eternal Love and had the same unconditional, unlimited, eternal trust and confidence in His Father and displayed an unlimited, unconditional and eternal obedience unto His Father!

THIS UNCONDITIONAL, UNLIMITED, ETERNAL AND MUTUAL **TRUE LOVE** BETWEEN THE SON AND THE FATHER IS THE BASIS OF OUR SALVATION AND THE TRUE PURPOSE OF IT!

This unfathomable Love was tested beyond our comprehension in the Son Jesus Christ. The Father did not stop loving His Son even when He was made sin and cursed for our sake (**Gal. 3:13**) and forsaken by His Father. And the Son did not stop loving and trusting His Father even when He was cursed and forsaken by Him, but committed His spirit to the hands of His Father! (**Lk. 23:46**) Man cannot possibly fathom these things except stand in awe or fall to his knees totally speechless. But in the Light of the above awesome Truth, we should finally SEE and comprehend the whole issue of LOVE, its depth and significance. We must also SEE better and deeper the reasons why the most important Commandments ever given to man by God touch LOVE AS THEIR ONLY OBJECT and why all the Law and the Prophets hang on and are fulfilled by LOVE! (**Mt. 22:40**)

Second, concerning believers, let us SEE and realize that lack of true LOVE has consequences that go far deeper than we might think or imagine or believe. Without LOVE we are not only nothing, but we are also cursed. Consequently, without LOVE we cannot truly and fruitfully minister Christ to anybody or expect any believer to grow up into Christ even if we speak truth to him! We may only grow up into the Head, even Christ, by speaking or preaching truth IN LOVE. (**Eph. 4:15**) Do we preach IN LOVE? I believe that

we speak or preach because we have knowledge and it may be vast. But our vast knowledge never grows in us the fruit of love; it grows the fruit of pride. (1Cor. 8:1) Truth alone is not enough. Our natural, selfish love is not enough. Our faith is not enough! If we speak or preach truth in the spirit of pride, arrogance, fears, self-righteousness or in any other unacceptable spirit or in our intellectual prowess, nobody would grow up into Christ according to Eph. 4:15.

We cannot love anybody whom we do not know. We may never know Christ unless and until He reveals Himself to us. We cannot know Him through any amount of study, teaching, preaching or fellowshiping. HE MUST REVEAL HIMSELF TO US though He may do it during such activities. But He reveals Himself first to those that love Him with passion and in truth not to those that know or teach the doctrines, but have no love. The Word tells us significantly enough that the first person to whom the Lord revealed Himself after His Resurrection was Mary Magdalene! It was not any of the chief Apostles, but a woman. (Jn. 20:14-17// Mk. 16:9) Why? Well, there was no doubt about her truly passionate love for her Master. She had no theological knowledge, but a great love for Jesus. After she was delivered from seven devils (Mk. 16:9) and cured by Jesus, she was always where He was, even to His last breath at His Cross. She was also the first to seek Him after His death and weeping for Him while His disciples went home.

The same happened to Saul of Tarsus to whom the Lord revealed Himself because of his great love for God which produced that great zeal in him for the affairs of God as he believed them in his heart at that time. (Acts 9:1-6) His great love made it possible for the Lord to make out of him Apostle Paul, who then contributed to the New Testament that great treasure of inspired writings.

We must realize that CHRIST, being God, IS LOVE before all else. Therefore, if we have no true love before all else, we cannot truly represent Him, minister Him fruitfully to anybody or serve Him Personally to His satisfaction. If we spend time in the presence of the Living Christ, though our

mind may be natural, unrenewed and dark, yet, we always “soak something from Him”; and it can be sensed. When Jesus was captured, Peter was in a horrible state of his soul when he was in the porch of the High Priest’s palace. Yet people could sense “something of Christ” in him, his speech was different and it betrayed him. (Mt. 26:73) When we spend no time with Christ, there is nothing of Him detectable in us. People cannot say: “*I see... I sense... I touch Christ in you.*” People may touch our religious flesh, which is spiritual death and not life.

There are many other passages in the Word of Our Lord where LOVE predominates and is the sole basis of all His actions toward us and also of His basic demands on us. Before we are allowed in our spirit and soul to start SEEING the answers from Our Father to our manifold questions, let us repeat and ponder the First and Second Commandment of God to man. It speaks about LOVE and nothing else! Let us SEE the depth of this Word and what it actually entails, where it starts and what it takes to fulfill it.

Since God IS Love (1Jn. 4:8b), His Love has its “fingers” in all His Creation and in all His Purposes. We will continue on this subject until we “exhaust” what the Father wants to give us at this time.

Let us therefore repeat the First Great Commandment of God to us, believers:

“And you shall LOVE the Lord Your God with ALL your heart, and with ALL your soul, and with ALL your mind, and with ALL your strength:”

And the Second one is like this: ***“You shall LOVE your neighbour as yourself.”*** (Mk. 12:30,31// Lev. 19:18; “neighbour” is not every man or every believer or everyone living “next door” to you; the Lord answered this question in Lk. 10:29-37).

On these two Great Commandments hang ALL THE LAW AND THE PROPHETS. (Mt. 22:40) If we would be able to fulfill these two Commandments, we would fulfill all the Law and the Prophets just as Our Lord fulfilled it. (Mt. 5:17). The problem is that WE ARE NOT ABLE to fulfill these two Commandments even if we know the entire Bible from cover to

cover and have faith to move mountains and understand all knowledge and preach the Word to all the world! And even if we would bestow all our possessions to feed the poor and offer our bodies to be burned, we still would remain unable to fulfill these two Commandments! (1Cor. 13:2,3) This is where all our true problems start... and also end.

OUR PROBLEM IS THAT WE MAY BE AS LUCIFER, WISE, KNOWLEDGEABLE AND PERFECT AND HAVE NO LOVE. IT WOULD ONLY BE A QUESTION OF TIME WHEN WE WOULD START TURNING SLOWLY AND IMPERCEPTIBLY INTO SATAN!

The true aim of our Salvation as conceived in the Heart of Our Father is not only that we would “miss hell and save our skin”, but that we would **LOVE HIM WITH ALL OUR BEING!** AND IF WE DO NOT DO THIS COMMANDMENT (even progressively), WE DO NOT DO THE WILL OF OUR FATHER. AND IF WE DO NOT DO THE WILL OF OUR FATHER (even progressively), WE SHALL NOT ENTER INTO THE KINGDOM OF HEAVEN NO MATTER HOW “GOOD” CHRISTIANS WE MIGHT HAVE BEEN AND HOW MANY WONDERFUL WORKS WE MIGHT HAVE DONE. (Mt. 7:21-23// Lk. 13:24-30 – it does not hurt to repeat truth and finally register it in our conscience). But the Lord provided the way, the only way where we are enabled to do these Commandments and the Will of Our Father. It is ON OUR OWN CROSS where we are truly losing our selfish nature which nature stands in the way of the Will of Our Father and also in the way of OUR TRUE LOVE FOR HIM!

It is clearly written: ***“Whosoever hates his brother is a MURDERER; and you know that no murderer has eternal life abiding in him.”*** (1Jn. 3:15)

Can human love change into hate? YES, IT CAN. The same is true for friendship or brotherhood; any friend or brother can indeed be changed into our enemy. All we have to do is to start speaking truth to him! (Gal. 4:16) Hatred is a great spiritual force which is not greater than love, but it may separate what love united and it may do a lot of damage in the person affected and in many others around him.

Let us register in our mind and see and understand in our heart that there are always some of the great forces in us that we should be aware of and that may destroy our natural love without a trace! They are the following: PRIDE, SELFISHNESS, JEALOUSY, FEARS, DOUBTS, PREJUDICES, STUBBORNNESS, INDEPENDENCE, SELF-SUFFICIENCY, SUSPICIONS and others. All married or divorced persons must have experienced some of them in their own life! True? These are also a clear proof that our soul is not fit for the Lord.

h) LOVE is the reason for ALL that God creates and does. However, His Love does not always seem to us to be a “true love” because it comes in different forms which we do not readily recognize or appreciate in our soul. In fact, the NATURAL BELIEVER HATES MANY ACTS OF THE LOVE OF GOD TOWARD HIM because many acts of the love of God toward him may cause him pain, suffering and confusion and he hates those acts of God’s love! Do you need an example? Here is one which we already mentioned before:

“AS MANY AS I LOVE, I rebuke and chasten (discipline)” (Rev. 3:19) THAT is not a pleasant love! But this is exactly what we, parents, do with our children! We rebuke and chasten them because we love them! True? Why? The Lord knows that even with believers NOTHING ELSE WILL DO IT! NO SERMON, NO TEACHING, NO BIBLE STUDY, NO CHURCH ATTENDANCE, NO RELIGIOUS ACTIVITY OF ANY KIND WILL EVER DO IT! Do you SEE this? Do you recognize this? Are you experiencing this in your own Christian life?

i) THE ABOVE WORD OF GOD goes to a greater depth than we could see and admit in our human soul. The Word continues in a different place saying:

“My son, do not despise the chastening of the Lord, nor faint when you are rebuked of Him. For whom the Lord LOVES He chastens, and SCOURGES EVERY SON whom He receives. IF YOU ENDURE chastening, God deals with you as with SONS... But if you be without chastisement, whereof all are partakers, then are you BASTARDS, and not sons.” (Heb. 12:5b,6, 7a,8)

Is THIS also the LOVE of Our Father? YES, IT IS! Are we receiving it? **NO!** We are resisting it... whether we are aware of it or not. We may talk about it or preach it to others, but we cannot believe or imagine that WE would need such a “treatment” and that it would come to us in such a form from Our Father, Who is Love. Also, we cannot accept that Our Father would use words like “bastards”, which we try to avoid, because they do not fit our human dignity. How can a born-again, baptized believer be a bastard? Very easily! He refuses the chastening of the Father because His chastening is not in sweet, loving words, but in SHARP Words, PIERCING Words. It must be ENDURED by us (this is also our cross), and **IF WE ENDURE IT, THEN** God deals with us as with sons and not as with bastards.

Furthermore, OUR FATHER SCOURGES EVERY SON WHOM HE IS RECEIVING! Not few, but EVERY ONE. Do we know what a scourge is? Do we use such an instrument of LOVE in our Christianity? NO! NEVER! According to our human soul, it is not the “Christian way”. The natural Christian souls are expected to deal with one another in “sweet, polite, courteous, pleasant and often in hypocritical” ways that do not prick or offend the senses and the pride of the natural souls of the others. These “sweet, pleasant, polite, courteous” ways are easily confused with “grace and understanding and love”. Do we SEE this? **NO!** We don’t! We are victims of the same grave error which will very effectively stop us from growing up into Christ and be changed into a spiritual believer! Our old man, old nature always expects or demands “love and grace”, but God apportioned to our old man whip, fire and death! Our old man will never understand or accept this Judgment. He will never admit that he deserves death and hell, but will always seek comfort, love, peace and grace. TRUE? Do you truly see this? Can you at least ponder this question?

When the Lord Himself made a scourge and cleansed the Temple, does it have any spiritual meaning for us today? (**Jn. 2:15**) Do we glance over it as over an interesting event in the life of Jesus which has no effect on us today?

Well, think twice, for the Lord had done nothing which would have no meaning for us in our own life. He made a physical scourge because the Lord lived in the Old Testament. Now, in the New Testament, it is to be a “spiritual scourge” using His WORD, POWERFUL, SHARP AND PIERCING WORD which pierces the division of our soul and spirit... and cleanses our own Temple, (**Heb. 4:12// 1Cor. 3:16**) where there are also powers that try to make our Temple a “den of thieves”. Do we see this spiritual fact? NO, we don’t, and we don’t want to see it. We like to be His Temple, but we hate to clean It, purge It and are lazy to vacuum It.

Yes, we ought to be kindly affectioned one to another with brotherly love in honour preferring one another, etc. (**Rom. 12:10**) BUT we ought not to be like that toward the spirits of darkness and evil in our old souls, which spirits are clearly discerned, identified and shown by the Spirit of God as talking to us or through us! I should be kindly affectioned toward man, but not toward any hell in the soul of that man. When man speaks to me, I am polite and kind to him; when hell speaks to me from that man, I am not polite and not kind. Our Lord did the same. (**Mt. 23:13-35**)

Every believer desires Love and Mercy from the Lord, but His Love and Mercy always bring along with them His rod especially while we are spiritual children... and He beats us with it to deliver our SOUL from hell. (**Pr. 23:13,14**)

Our Father is looking into our eyes and He says to us ***“YOU KNOW NOTHING YET ABOUT MY LOVE... AND YOU KNOW NOTHING YET ABOUT YOUR OLD SINFUL NATURE”***. Is Our Father right or is He wrong? Let us allow Him to grant us the following necessary Light in spirit.

WHEN GOD FORMED DARKNESS AND CREATED EVIL, WHEN HE CREATED LUCIFER AND SUFFERED HIS FALL AND CHANGE INTO SATAN, WHEN HE CREATED MAN AND SUFFERED HIS FALL AND CHANGE INTO AN EVIL CREATURE AND SINNER, WHEN HE THEN SENT HIS SON AND SUFFERED HIS DEATH AND SACRIFICE... <u>HE DID IT ALL BECAUSE OF HIS LOVE!</u>
--

GOD HAS HAD A GREAT AND UNCONDITIONAL LOVE FOR ALL **THOSE** SOULS THAT WILL BE WILLING TO FULFIL HIS WILL AND HIS GREAT DESIRE EXPRESSED IN HIS COMMANDMENTS AND WILL OVERCOME ALL THE POWERS OF DARKNESS AND EVIL INSIDE AND OUTSIDE OF THEMSELVES SO THAT GOD COULD FINALLY HAVE HIS DESIRED ETERNAL FAMILY.

No creature could satisfy Adam but a woman created in Adam's own image and of his bones. (**Gen. 2:18-23**) EQUALLY, no creature could satisfy God but MAN created in God's Own Image and of His "bones". (**Eph. 5:30**) *"Therefore shall the MAN leave his father and mother, and shall cleave unto his Lord, and they shall be ONE BODY AND ONE SPIRIT. And they shall be both transparent and will not be ashamed to be brethren."* (spiritual transcript and meaning of **Gen. 2:24,25// Eph. 5:31// Heb. 2:11**)

Many Angels that served God faithfully had fallen and followed Satan. Therefore MAN MUST BE TESTED by the very same evil, deceptions and temptations that God's Angels were tested with, and MAN MUST BE PROVEN, dependable, faithful, loving God more than himself. God the Son will never "marry" anyone, who in time might again embrace evil and fall and become unfaithful to Him. Hence, MAN must become absolutely NEW in his SPIRIT, SOUL and BODY having no spot or wrinkle from the old creation, or any such thing. Man (Church) must become absolutely holy and without any blemish of sin, evil and darkness. (**Eph. 5:27**)

Furthermore...

MAN MUST BECOME MUCH DIFFERENT THAN LUCIFER, WHO WAS ALSO PERFECT IN HIS BEAUTY AND WISDOM AND ALSO "WITHOUT SPOT OR WRINKLE OR ANY BLEMISH OF SIN"! MAN MUST BECOME **MORE** DEPENDABLE, **MORE** FAITHFUL AND **MORE** LOVING OF GOD THAN LUCIFER EVER WAS! OTHERWISE, GOD WOULD HAVE NO GUARANTEE THAT HE WOULD NOT FOLLOW THE PATH OF LUCIFER EVEN AFTER HIS MARRIAGE TO HIS SON! DO WE SEE THIS TRUTH? OR ARE WE BLIND TO IT?

SURELY WE CAN ALWAYS TRUST OUR LORD, BUT HOW MUCH CAN OUR LORD TRUST US? CAN WE ASSESS IT? NO!

We must repeat and SEE that when we believe and are born-again and redeemed, we are NOT the sons and daughters of God as yet. We are potential sons/daughters. As redeemed, we are spiritual toddlers that know nothing about their Father and about themselves! At that time and at that spiritual stage, we only receive the POWER TO BECOME the sons of God, as it is written: ***“But as many as received Him (as their Saviour and became redeemed) to them gave He POWER TO BECOME THE SONS OF GOD...”*** (Jn. 1:12)

THAT POWER becomes absolutely necessary for us when we decide to grow up and follow the Lord on the narrow way. Why? In our own power we cannot even dream about following the Lord and becoming His true sons and daughters. Without THAT POWER we cannot be formed into His Image.

j) WE HAVE NEVER truly comprehended the TRUE PURPOSE OF GOD, OUR FATHER. We have never recognized the true ways and forms of His Love. We thus have never SEEN and understood the mighty difference between a person being redeemed and forgiven, and the true son/daughter of God! We have never SEEN and understood in spirit why God did what He did in the Old Testament and that it all shows and proves the spiritual truths in the New Testament. This includes this MOST IMPORTANT ISSUE that we are dealing with in this book – the true difference between the SOUL and the SPIRIT.

THEIR SEPARATE SALVATIONS are clearly illustrated by Our Father in His sovereign acts in the Old Testament. There is yet a mountain of knowledge and wisdom we could draw from the Old Testament and its fulfillment in the New Testament in the spiritual world, but our time is now short.

So, let us SEE what Our Father would show us in the Old Testament concerning this MOST IMPORTANT ISSUE of

our Christian life. God had brought His chosen people out of Egypt through the Red Sea. Egypt typified the kingdom of Satan and Pharaoh typified Satan himself. The people of Israel were taken out of the power and possession of Satan and that, by the blood of the lamb, which was killed in each family. (Ex. 12:5-11) Of course, the lamb typified the Lamb of God, which took away the sin of the world by His Blood. (Jn. 1:29) This crossing of the Red Sea was a sheer miracle that no man can do in his own power or wisdom. It represents our Redemption from the kingdom of the powers of darkness and evil and the resurrection in our SPIRIT... which is also a sheer miracle that no man can do in his power or wisdom. Hence, *“not by works of man that any man should boast”* proves this fact. (Eph. 2:9)

After this crossing, God did not bring Israel to their Promised Land, but to a wilderness where there was nothing to eat, drink or to enjoy for their souls. WHY? There God began to deal with their SOULS, which “remained in Egypt” and murmured and complained and were dissatisfied and refused to obey God. THEY GOT OUT OF EGYPT-THE KINGDOM OF SATAN, BUT EGYPT WITH ITS KINGDOM OF SATAN DID NOT GET OUT OF THEIR SOULS.

God showed them that He was all sufficient for them in any wilderness. He “rained bread on them” from Heaven that people would go out and gather a certain rate every day ***“that I may PROVE THEM whether they will walk in My law or not.”*** (Ex. 16:4)

He also gave them drink from the Rock, which Rock was Christ. (1Cor. 10:4) And when they spoke against God and Moses, the Lord sent fiery serpents to bite them and much people of Israel died. And then the Lord showed mercy and commanded Moses to make a serpent of brass and raise it upon a pole so that anyone who was bitten and would behold it could live. (Num.21:5-9) OBEDIENCE WAS NOW REQUIRED from them to recover-save their SOULS from Egypt and from the kingdom of Satan, but people failed to do the required works of obedience.

But the Lord desired that now Israel would LEARN OBEDIENCE and enter the Promised Land soon after crossing the Red Sea. He showed them the Promised Land that it was the land that indeed flowed with milk and honey by sending there spies who searched the land for 40 days. But the people refused to believe and to go in and possess it! Therefore, the Lord let them wander in the wilderness for 40 years (one year for each day of searching the land by the spies) and die there. None of them was allowed to see or enter the Promised Land. Only their children who were 20 years of age and younger at the time of this Judgment of God, and Joshua and Caleb were all brought to the Promised Land. (**Num. 13:25-33; 14:1-6,29-38**)

Now, let us come to the New Testament and SEE the spiritual reflection of this fact, namely, that...

THIS IS PRECISELY THE SAME CASE WITH CHRISTIANS! THEY HAVE BEEN REDEEMED FROM THE POWERS OF DARKNESS AND EVIL, THEY "CROSSED THEIR RED SEA" AND GOT OUT OF THE KINGDOM OF SATAN (WERE REDEEMED)... BUT THE KINGDOM OF SATAN DID NOT GET OUT OF THEIR SOULS... THEY KEEP LUSTING FOR THE "DELICACIES OF THEIR OLD LIFE (WINE) EVEN FOR THEIR RETURN TO IT". (**Lk. 5:39**)

AFTER OUR REDEMPTION, WE HAVE EQUALLY NOT ENTERED THE KINGDOM OF HEAVEN, BUT HAVE BEEN LEFT IN A (SPIRITUAL) WILDERNESS OF THIS EVIL WORLD WHERE THERE IS EQUALLY NOTHING TO EAT, DRINK OR ENJOY FOR OUR SPIRIT. HERE GOD DEALS WITH OUR SOULS THAT WE MAY LEARN OBEDIENCE TO HIM! BUT MANY MURMUR, COMPLAIN, ARE DISSATISFIED AND MISERABLE, HUNGRY AND THIRSTY. MANY DESIRE TO LIVE THEIR OLD LIFE AND REFUSE TO OBEY THE WORD OF GOD. NOTHING HAS CHANGED!

Our Father has sent to us Bread from Heaven (**Jn. 6:31-35**) in a similar way to PROVE US whether we will walk in His Spirit or not! (**Gal. 5:25**) Do we walk in **His SPIRIT**, or do we walk in **OUR SOUL**? Can we discern this difference and answer this question before the Lord? Those that walk

in their soul cannot answer it because they have no conscience of what it is to walk in His Spirit. Only those that walk in His Spirit can distinguish and answer that question.

We are also expected to “*go out and gather a certain portion of His Bread (Life) every day*”. Our Lord came that we might have Life and have it more abundantly. (**Jn. 10:10**) THAT does not mean that we have that Life and even abundantly just by His coming for that purpose! Do we “*gather and eat His Bread daily*” or do we spiritually starve? The Lord says that WE DO NOT come to Him to “*gather Bread (that we may have Life), a portion every day... here a little and there a little*”! (**Jn. 5:40// Is. 28:10**) Our Lord has also given us a drink in His Spirit. Do we drink His Spirit or do we spiritually thirst? We may not know this answer either.

We can also “speak against God”, not necessarily verbally, but with the attitude of our natural soul, through our “flesh”. When we do so in a prolonged manner, the Lord similarly allows us to be “bitten by fiery serpents”, evil spirits which HE either sends to us (**1Sam. 16:14,15**) or allows them to come to us and do their evil work in us through deceptions and temptations and many of us might die (be separated). But Our Father has raised on a pole (Cross) His Son (**Jn. 3:14**), who was made sin and a curse (brazen serpent – **Gen. 3:14**) for our sake (**2Cor. 5:21// Gal. 3:13**), so that when we “look at Him”, we may live. When we are not looking at Him, there is NO FAITH IN OUR SPIRIT AND NO LIFE IN OUR SOUL. (**Heb. 12:2**)

Let us now consider the spiritual fact which decisively shows the MOST IMPORTANT ISSUE of this book.

While there was no other way from Egypt to the Promised Land except through the Red Sea, there were ways to reach the Promised Land on dry land from the wilderness after Israel crossed the Red Sea. Despite this fact, Our Father had REPEATED the miracle of the Red Sea and brought Israel to cross yet another body of water and yet another death – river Jordan! WHY? Because...

THE CROSSING OF THE RED SEA REPRESENTS THE DEATH AND RESURRECTION OF THE BELIEVER'S **SPIRIT** – HIS REDEMPTION.

THE CROSSING OF RIVER JORDAN REPRESENTS THE DEATH AND RESURRECTION OF THE BELIEVER'S **SOUL** – HIS FULL SALVATION.

NO ISRAELITE ENTERED THE PROMISED LAND EXCEPT THROUGH THE RIVER JORDAN WALKING THROUGH DEATH THE SECOND TIME. EQUALLY, NO BELIEVER WILL ENTER THE KINGDOM OF HEAVEN UNLESS HE DIES TO HIS FLESH IN HIS SOUL ALSO. WE MUST DIE AND BE RESURRECTED IN OUR SOUL BY DENYING ITS NATURAL LIFE LIVED IN “EGYPT AND IN WILDERNESS” AND BY “CROSSING OUR SPIRITUAL JORDAN”. (**Jos. 3:17// Mt. 16:24,25// Gal. 2:20a// 2Thess. 1:5**) THIS RIVER TYPIFIES DEATH. IT FLOWS FROM THE “LIVING” SEA OF GALILEE INTO THE “DEAD” SEA AND OUR LORD WAS BAPTIZED IN THAT RIVER. (**Mt. 3:13**) ANY SOUL THAT DESIRES TO ENTER THE KINGDOM MUST DIE DESCENDING TO THE ARK (CHRIST) WHICH WAS AT THE BOTTOM OF RIVER JORDAN (DEATH-HELL) AND BE RESURRECTED BY ASCENDING FROM THAT DEATH INTO LIFE EVERLASTING.

THE SEPARATE SALVATION OF OUR SPIRIT AND OF OUR SOUL IS THUS CLEARLY SHOWN TO US BY OUR FATHER ALREADY IN THE OLD TESTAMENT.

WHEN THE LORD SAID THAT “WE MUST BE BORN-AGAIN”, HE DID NOT MEAN JUST OUR SPIRIT, BUT ALSO OUR SOUL. THE SPIRIT OF OUR OLD MIND (**Eph. 4:23**) AND OF OUR WICKED AND DECEITFUL OLD HEART (**Jer. 17:9**) AND STUBBORN OLD WILL (**Phil. 2:13**) MUST ALSO BE “BORN-AGAIN”, RENEWED, RECREATED BY THE SAME SPIRIT OF GOD. (**Jn. 3:6,7**)

k) LET US ALSO CONSIDER before Our Father another important matter which is described to us in **1Cor. 10:5-15**. Verse 11 says:

“Now all these things happened unto them (Israel) for ensamples and they are written FOR OUR ADMONITION upon whom the ENDS OF THE WORLD ARE COME”. How true this is for us especially today when the ends of the world have truly come upon us.

Here Apostle Paul warns the church in Corinth that they may end up in the same way as Israel did in the wilderness and fail to inherit the Kingdom and perish! Yet, we must notice that no matter how the people of Israel murmured, complained, spoke against God, against Moses and Aaron, no matter how they behaved and caused grief to God, He always had mercy on them and forgave them and gave them the way out of the temptations to which they were yielding. So it is today with us. (1Cor. 10:13)

There was only ONE GREAT SIN that the people of Israel had committed which finally brought God's Judgment upon them and caused them to wander in the wilderness for 40 years and die there and never see the Promised Land. It was THEIR UNBELIEF AND REFUSAL TO ENTER THE PROMISED LAND! (Num. 13:17-33; 14:1-33)

Do we, Christians, SEE and understand what this truly means for us today? Do we fare better than Israel did? NO! We equally do not believe God when He tells us or shows us our sinful nature, our unbelief, unwillingness or disobedience toward Him. We equally do not seek the Kingdom first, as it is clearly commanded to us by Our Lord! (Mt. 6:33) We equally REFUSE TO ENTER THE KINGDOM, and give God foolish excuses! (Mt. 22:2-8) I believe that all Christians are bidden to the Wedding of His Son, which is a preparation for the Kingdom, and what is their response? The Word says that THEY WOULD NOT COME! (Mt. 22:3)

Now, why should Christians fare better than Israel? Do we have a good reason for it? Yes, we do; we have the Spirit of God dwelling in our spirit making us His Temple while the children of the Old Testament, Israel, did not have Him dwelling in them. Yet, we are not really better than the Israel which was in the wilderness! That is why the Lord had warned us through His Word in 1Cor. 10:5-15.

It is also written that...

“the believer which knew his Lord's Will and prepared not himself... shall be beaten with many stripes.”
And ***“unto whomsoever much is given (Holy Spirit), of him shall be much required”.*** (Lk. 12:47,48)

So, why are we not much different from Israel? Let us go deeper into our spirit and soul and see the true reasons.

OUR HUMAN NATURE IS NOT DIFFERENT FROM THE ONE IN THE CHILDREN OF ISRAEL! WE ARE JUST AS SELFISH, SELF-SEEKING, COMFORT SEEKING, PLEASURE AND SATISFACTION SEEKING AS THEY WERE! EVEN IN OUR MINISTRY, WE SEEK OUR OWN GOALS AND NOT GOD'S GOALS! IN OUR SALVATION, WE ARE NOT SEEKING THE LORD'S PLEASURE, HIS SATISFACTION AND HIS DELIGHT; WE ARE NOT SEEKING THE WILL OF OUR FATHER, WE ALWAYS SEEK OUR OWN WILL AND DELIGHT.

Had the Lord had delight in Israel, He would have brought them into the Promised Land. (Num. 14:8) Our Lord will equally bring us into the Kingdom of Heaven IF He will delight in us. Does He delight in us? Is He in truth satisfied with us? Can we answer these important questions? Most probably we cannot.

Too many Christians even refuse to be baptized in water by immersion according to the Scripture mostly because they are ignorant of the Scripture or are deceived by their leaders. The result is that their OLD SOUL WILL REMAIN OLD, UNRENEWED AND WILL NOT ENTER THE MARRIAGE SUPPER OF THE LAMB. The Lord will say to them ***"I never knew you, depart from Me, you that work iniquity"*** (Mt. 7:23// Lk. 13:27) or He will say ***"I know you not"*** and will shut the door. (Mt. 25:10-12) What will then happen to these souls?

They will spend their apportioned time in the darkness, weeping and gnashing their teeth. They will be judged by the Lord and cast out of the Kingdom of Heaven into the outer darkness, there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth. (Mt. 8:12; 22:13; 25:30) It will all depend on the Lord's Judgment of them. Again, a bitter truth, but shall we continue ignoring it and be later unfortunate victims of it? Why are we unwilling to judge ourselves now so that we would not be judged later, and possibly even condemned with the world? (1Cor. 11:31,32) This particular Word was given for the eating of the Lord's Supper, but it applies generally as

well. “Weeping and gnashing of teeth” should also indicate “deep and true remorse, confessions and repentances”.

1) FINALLY, it would be absolutely vital for us to SEE and understand that all the above declared facts and truths lead us to THE VERY CORE OF THIS MOST IMPORTANT ISSUE IN OUR CHRISTIAN LIFE AFTER OUR REDEMPTION. That is, if we consciously neglect the Will and Purpose of Our Father leading us to deny our self and take up our cross and follow Our Lord (Mt. 16:24), if we consciously refuse to die to our old, natural life, it also means that we consciously refuse to “cross the river Jordan and enter our Promised Land”, that is, the Kingdom of Heaven. (Mt. 22:2,3,5,8) Denying our old, natural self may be compared to overcoming the “Canaanite people and the giants, the sons of Anak” in our soul which are the powers of darkness and evil! They seem to be so strong and mighty and we appear as grasshoppers to them and to ourselves! (Num. 13:33)

The most important and KEY WORD in this story of the people of Israel refusing to enter the Promised Land is only one word – OVERCOME! (Num. 13:30b) Only Caleb declared to the people of Israel saying: ***“Let us go up at once, and possess it; for we are well able to OVERCOME it!”***

Only a man with this faith is able to declare such things also to the Church of today and say: ***“We are well able to OVERCOME the forces of darkness and evil outside and inside of our soul and establish the Kingdom of Heaven therein.”*** This is exactly why the Lord, speaking to His Church, gives promises only to ***“HIM THAT OVERCOMES”***. (Rev. 2:7,11,17,26; 3:5,12,21). And this is exactly why Our Father says to us the following truth which few Christians have truly registered in their conscience:

“HE THAT BELIEVES IS A BELIEVER, BUT THE BELIEVER THAT OVERCOMES SHALL INHERIT ALL THINGS; AND I WILL BE HIS GOD, AND HE SHALL BE MY SON”. (see Rev. 21:7)

Some believers may be well acquainted with the above Word of God while many others may not have the necessary awareness and understanding of this Word and its impact on their future life and destiny. Is there a believer that had ever asked himself: *“What happens to me if I do not overcome, if I do nothing?”* And would he have the honesty to admit and say to himself: *“I will lose all my inheritance, God will not be my God and I will not be His son... despite being redeemed”!* Is this matter sufficiently important to be considered with more than a casual interest and to be also preached to believers and warn them?

Are we going to do nothing just because *we believe* that all things were accomplished in Christ? If we believe this, we believe truth. But we do not see or understand HOW we are going to get all these “things accomplished in Christ” into our own being and WHEN. Do we? Oh, we have imaginations and reasoning and feelings and our own convictions which may have nothing to do with the Word of God. But do we have the truth about it? Yes, we have. The Lord says: HOW, is by overcoming, and WHEN, is between our water baptism and death or rapture! Do we believe this truth also? To believe any one truth of God which in itself is incomplete and disbelieve other truths of God on which the first truth depends, brings us nowhere and accomplishes in us absolutely nothing!

So, are we going to overcome what God requires from us to overcome? Shall we believe it and do it or ignore it? The choice is ours, not God’s. But I say: LET US DO IT, not just for our sake, but for God’s sake, Who desires us to be His sons and daughters, and Who also well deserves to have us as sons and daughters for He paid for us all with His Own Life!

m) WE HAVE already declared in the previous Chapters what we have to overcome and how. The Lord desires that we also SEE and understand another practical side of overcoming our self, what the *“denying of our self and taking up our cross and following the Lord”* (Mt. 16:24) really

means. What does it mean to say “*I die daily*”, (1Cor. 15:31) to “*crucify my flesh*” (Gal. 5:24) or to “*reckon myself dead*” (Rom. 6:11), etc.

Here we must repeat and register in our conscience the fact that DEATH IS NOT AN END OF EXISTENCE; rather, it is a SEPARATION. Hence, to “DIE”, to “BE CRUCIFIED” practically means TO BE SEPARATED FROM THE NATURE (SOURCE) OF SIN, FROM THE FLESH, from the spirits that cause us to sin and keep us in bondage of living in our old, natural soul. They will then lose all their power and influence over us.

THE DEATH OF OUR OLD SELF THEN MEANS THE SEPARATION OF OUR SOUL FROM ITS NATURE OF SIN; NOT FROM OUR SINS AS DEEDS, WHICH WE COMMIT, BUT FROM ITS VERY NATURE OF SIN, LAW OF SIN, SPIRIT OF SIN, SOURCE OF SIN, WHICH CAUSES US CONTINUALLY TO SIN. THAT IS THE TRUE DELIVERANCE OF OUR SOUL, ITS TRUE PERFECTION, WHOLENESS, HOLINESS AND ITS TRUE AND FULL SALVATION!

OUR CREATED SOUL (HEART, MIND, WILL) DOES NOT CEASE TO EXIST WHEN IT DIES TO ITS SINFUL NATURE!

When the Lord brings us through darkness or evil or problems or testing or conflict or troubles of any kind, He is then able to show us WHO WE ARE, where our soul fails, where it reacts in an old and unacceptable way, where it is influenced or even governed by the forces of darkness and evil, where it keeps producing bitter and wild fruit that is not acceptable to the Lord. The Lord shows us where our soul needs to “die”, which is to say, to be separated from the forces that cause our soul to fail.

When we then SEE and understand what we need and what the Lord hates, we are then called by the Lord to decide by our free will to BE DELIVERED from it, to be SEPARATED from it, FREED from it. It is important for us to realize that unless we SEE what is sinful, unacceptable and what the Lord hates in our soul, we will never be able to confess it and repent from it effectively. That also means that we will not be delivered from it effectively. Let us therefore see and understand the following fact:

WHEN WE “DIE” TO OUR OLD SELF, TO OUR OLD MAN, HE DOES NOT DISAPPEAR FROM OUR LIFE! BEING SEPARATED FROM US, HE LOST HIS INFLUENCE, HIS POWER OVER OUR EARTHLY LIFE. BUT WHEN WE DESIRE HIM TO RETURN, HE IS SUDDENLY “THERE” AND READY TO EMBRACE US AGAIN. HIS “*FINGERS SEEM TO BE ALWAYS STICKING OUT OF HIS COFFIN*” TRYING TO GET OUR ATTENTION. HE WILL BEG US, REASON WITH US, TEMPT US, PERSUADE US, PAY ANY PRICE JUST SO WE WOULD RECEIVE HIM AGAIN INTO OUR LIFE AND INTO “HIS OLD TIME RELIGION”. HE IS A FOXY PERFORMER AND DIPLOMAT.

But these are things and facts which soulish believers cannot see or understand. Yet, once they start “dying” to their old soulish life, they will be able to start SEEING these things. These facts are vitally important to our destiny and the way by which we will get to our destiny.

The death and resurrection of our SPIRIT AND SOUL determines our future Life (existence in the Presence of God) or, without them, our future Death (existence in a separation from God). TO CHOOSE OUR DESTINY IS OUR PART TO DO, NOT GOD’S PART! Remember Lucifer! God did not choose his destiny, Lucifer chose it in himself. We must also be conscious of the fact that with our choice of Life we are also choosing the conditions that God set for us clearly in His Word – His Covenant with us. These conditions are between Him and us and they include OUR PART TO DO in cooperation with Him, under His guidance, His Power, Wisdom and Grace.

WE CANNOT DO OUR PART OF OUR SALVATION WITHOUT GOD, AND GOD WILL NOT DO HIS PART OF OUR SALVATION IN US – WITHOUT US!

The above truth may also explain most of our failures, pains and frustrations we experience in our salvation process during our earthly lives. We, who mean “business” with Our Lord and are not just “weekly visitors in a building with stained windows”, are undoubtedly experiencing all kinds of difficulties and pains, problems, frustrations even tragedies

during our earthly life as born-again, baptized believers. All these ill consequences are always due to the above spiritual facts and whether we are learning them during our Christian life or not. We must say the following:

WHENEVER WE TRY TO DO **GOD'S PART** IN OUR SALVATION PROCESS, WE ALWAYS FALL, AND THAT FALL WILL ALWAYS CAUSE US PAIN, SUFFERING, MISUNDERSTANDING, FRUSTRATION AND MANY OTHER ILL EFFECTS, EVEN HARDENING OF OUR HEARTS TOWARD TRUTH OR EVEN TOWARD GOD HIMSELF.

WHENEVER WE TRY TO DO **OUR PART** IN OUR SALVATION PROCESS **WITHOUT GOD**, IN OUR OWN POWER AND OWN WAYS, WE AGAIN FALL AND THE SAME ILL CONSEQUENCES FOLLOW!

IT WAS NEVER OUR PART TO FIGHT OUR FLESH SINCE OUR FLESH CAN NEVER DESTROY ITSELF, OUR OWN SINFUL NATURE CAN NEVER DENY AND CRUCIFY ITSELF! It has always been God's part to do, but always with our cooperation – our confession, repentance and consent to turn away from it and destroy it. That is why God first destroyed our flesh on the Cross of Our Lord, so that, before Satan, our old man, which is Satan's territory and "victory", was legally, morally and righteously destroyed! Satan can't say a word against it or accuse God of any unrighteousness, unholiness or of any "illegal act" against His Own Principles. God can now do all the necessary works in us based on HIS WILL AND THE PRICE WHICH HIS SON HAD PAID IN FULL. ALL GOD NEEDS, AND IS MISSING, IS OUR CONSENT FOR HIS NECESSARY WORKS.

Our first part is to see and believe "***that our old man is crucified with Him (Christ)***". (Rom. 6:6)

Our second part is to see and believe that God crucified our old man before we existed.

This, His act in Christ, was done without our true and conscious consent, which Satan requires from God!

GOD NEEDS OUR CONTINUOUS CONSENT. How are we to die daily? (1Cor. 15: 31b// Lk. 9:23) By saying to our Father: "NOT MY WILL, BUT THINE BE DONE". (Lk. 22:42b) Do we see

this? Not really. But it is OUR PART TO DO in the Salvation of our soul.

OUR OLD MAN –SINFUL NATURE– REMAINS SATAN’S LEGAL POSSESSION AND TERRITORY IN OUR SOUL EVEN AFTER OUR REDEMPTION. HIS CONTINUED PRESENCE IN US THROUGH OUR OLD MAN IS NOT SUBJECTED TO GOD’S DECISIONS, BUT TO OUR DECISIONS. YET WE RESIST GOD IN HIS EFFORTS TO DESTROY SATAN’S RULE IN OUR SOUL THROUGH OUR OLD MAN!

GOD DOES NOT QUESTION THIS SATAN’S LEGAL TERRITORY IN OUR OLD SOUL EVEN THOUGH OUR SOUL IS REDEEMED AND IS NOT HIS LEGAL POSSESSION. IT IS THE SAME WITH HIS KINGDOMS IN THIS WORLD. WHEN SATAN OFFERED THEM TO JESUS, IF HE WOULD FALL DOWN AND WORSHIP HIM, (Mt. 4:8,9) THE LORD DID NOT DISPUTE WITH SATAN HIS POSSESSIONS IN THIS WORLD EVEN THOUGH “*the earth is the Lord’s, and the fulness thereof; the world and they that dwell therein.*” (Ps. 24:1) HE ALLOWS SATAN TO RULE THE WORLD EVEN TODAY AFTER THE LORD HAD REDEEMED NOT ONLY MEN, BUT THE EARTH ALSO AND ALL THAT WAS LOST. (Mt. 18:11) DO WE SEE THIS ISSUE? WE SHOULD.

OUR OLD MAN WAS DESTROYED IN CHRIST BY THE WILL OF THE FATHER BEFORE WE EXISTED. BUT NOW THAT WE LIVE AND OUR OLD MAN LIVES IN US, HE MUST BE DESTROYED IN US BY OUR WILL! WE MUST CONFESS THIS FAITH AND GIVE OUR FATHER OUR CONSENT. WE, REDEEMED SOULS, MUST “**SAY SO**” WITH OUR MOUTH! (Ps. 107:2// Rom. 10:9a)

THEREFORE, WE HAVE TO WILL WHAT GOD HAD ALREADY WILLED AND DONE FOR US BEFORE WE EXISTED! HIS WILL AND OUR WILL MUST BECOME ONE. GOD CAN DO NOTHING WITH OUR OLD MAN UNLESS HE HAS A CONTINUOUS CONSENT OF OUR WILL WITH CONFESSIONS AND REPENTANCES WHICH ARE ALL NECESSARY FOR THE PROCESS OF OUR OLD MAN’S DESTRUCTION TO CONTINUE BY THE POWER OF GOD’S SPIRIT.

Let us remember what was happening in the Garden of Eden in the spiritual world and that Satan, being allowed by God to tempt Adam and Eve, gained a very important legal victory and God had not disputed Satan’s method!

SATAN GAINED MAN'S SOUL BY MAN'S BELIEF AND THE WORK OF THAT BELIEF – EATING THE FRUIT. (**Gen. 3:6**) AS A RESULT, MAN WAS "BORN-AGAIN" BY THE SPIRIT OF SIN, WHICH BEGAN TO DWELL IN HIM AND HE BECAME A "TEMPLE OF SATAN" (Does it sound familiar?). AFTER CHRIST'S DEATH AND OUR REDEMPTION, MAN WAS "BORN-AGAIN-AGAIN" BY THE SPIRIT OF GOD AND HE BECAME THE "TEMPLE OF GOD" AGAIN. (**1Cor. 3:16**) SATAN HAD LEGALLY LOST THE POSSESSION OF OUR SOUL BUT NOT OF ITS SPIRIT OF SIN, OF ITS "OLD MAN" WHICH IS SATAN'S GOVERNOR IN MAN'S SOUL AND HIS TERRITORY IN OUR SOUL! HE MAY ONLY LOSE IT BY MAN'S DECISIONS, WHICH MAY AT TIMES BE VERY PAINFUL!

GOD WILL NEVER ACT WITHOUT OR AGAINST OUR FREE WILL, WITHOUT OUR DECISIONS, WITHOUT OUR CONSENT AND A CONSCIOUS COOPERATION WITH HIM TO DESTROY (PUT OFF – **Eph. 4:22**) OUR "OLD MAN" WHICH REMAINS SATAN'S LEGAL POSSESSION IN EVERY REDEEMED MAN!

THIS IS PRECISELY WHERE SATAN'S HOPES ARE TO DECEIVE US AND GET US BACK WHEN WE REFUSE OUR CROSS! THAT IS WHY THE GREATEST DECEPTION OF SATAN IN BELIEVERS IS THAT AFTER OUR REDEMPTION WE DO NOT HAVE TO "MOVE OUR FINGER" OR DECIDE ON ANYTHING BECAUSE "EVERYTHING HAS ALREADY BEEN DONE IN CHRIST". IF YOU WILL CLING TO THIS DOCTRINE AND REFUSE TO SEE AND FOLLOW THE ABOVE TRUTH, IT MAY COST YOU YOUR LIFE!

Paul was sent by the Lord unto Gentiles ***"to open their eyes and to turn them from darkness to light, AND from the POWER OF SATAN unto (the POWER of) GOD"***. (**Acts 26:18**)

But this same principle applies to carnal and blind believers. When their eyes are not open, they are not turned from darkness to light and from the POWER OF SATAN to the POWER OF GOD!

It is like we would be living in a castle owned by a cruel landlord and that castle was one day purchased by a good and merciful Landlord. But the armed sentry of the castle did not leave! Their departure depends solely on our decision, not the new Landlord's decision. We seemingly do

not mind keeping them and remaining in “their care” though the castle is not theirs any more!

Let us now consider three important facts which underline and prove the above truth of both the “willed-desired death” and the “actual death” of our “old man”. His “willed-desired death” was done by the Will-Desire of Our Father. (2Pet. 3:9) His “actual death” is done by our will-decision. There are three points to consider here:

(1) In Rom. 10:10 it is NOT written: “For with the heart man believes unto SALVATION”, but it is written:

“For with the HEART man believes unto RIGHTEOUSNESS; and with the MOUTH CONFESSION is made unto SALVATION.”

Our faith is not enough! Even though our heart may believe unto righteousness, God needs the work of this faith – the confession of our mouth unto Salvation. When man confesses his faith and thus the desire of his heart to be saved, God receives this man’s consent and He can then redeem him based on the full payment provided by the Blood of the Lamb AND man’s faith AND his work of that faith which then produced its fruit – his Redemption! And Satan must shut-up! If man confesses nothing, makes no clear decision, GOD CAN DO NOTHING though the full payment for the Redemption of that man was paid and though that man believed! All pagans belong here. Satan would object and accuse God of unrighteousness should any pagan be saved believing but without confessing (work of) his belief with his mouth... and Satan would have the right!

(2) The same principle applies for the continued process of the Salvation of our soul. The Word clearly says: **“IF WE CONFESS our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins...”** (1Jn. 1:9a). First, we must SEE our sins, obtain light-faith about our sins, then we must do the work of that faith in CONFESSING THEM WITH OUR MOUTH. That moves the hand of God to forgive and, again, Satan cannot say one word of opposition or accusation.

(3) The same principle applied also to Our Saviour, Who was slain before the foundations of the world, that is, BEFORE HE WAS BORN in Bethlehem. (1Pet. 1:18-20) He also had to give to His Father His “legal” CONSENT WITH HIS OWN MOUTH: **“NEVERTHELESS, NOT MY WILL BUT THINE BE DONE”!** (Lk. 22:42)

THE FATHER REQUIRED HIS SON’S DECISION AND HIS CONSENT CONCERNING DRINKING THE CUP AND DEATH ON THE CROSS FROM HIS OWN MOUTH AFTER HE WAS BORN THOUGH HE WAS SLAIN BEFORE HE EXISTED AS MAN! (Rev. 13:8) DO YOU SEE THIS? AND JESUS THE MAN HAD THE POWER OF HIS WILL TO REFUSE TO DRINK THE CUP AND DIE ON THE CROSS! DO WE REALIZE THIS TRUTH? **NO, WE DON’T!** We do not want to even think about this alternative!

We may conclude this truth as follows.

WE HAVE TO DECIDE TO DIE TO OUR “OLD MAN” IN US WHICH DEATH WAS ALREADY EXECUTED FOR US BY GOD BEFORE WE WERE BORN. WE HAVE TO DECIDE TO GROW UP INTO CHRIST WHERE GOD HAD ALREADY PUT US BEFORE WE WERE BORN, AND WE HAVE TO DECIDE TO CLIMB UP TO HEAVENLY PLACES WHERE GOD HAD ALREADY PLACED US BEFORE WE WERE BORN! (Eph. 2:6) DO WE SEE THESE FACTS? WE MUST!

It may take quite a long time before the Lord finally obtains from our heart, mind and will what He desires from us and needs for His work in us. He supplies to us ALL that we need for such a continual consent, the necessary faith (vision, evidence, spiritual comprehension, spiritual power) and all the necessary circumstances which are designed by Him to show us our true state and true need. Our initial consent may take but a few seconds after years of blindness, deafness and resistance. And the Lord has been working in us to obtain our willingness and the decisions of our whole soul. But those few seconds will save the life and redirect the destiny of many believers, who still live in darkness!

And, please, do not tell me that it is impossible for you to decide to be fully saved and prepared by the Lord for His

Coming; that your mouth cannot confess such a decision to the Lord. THAT is all that the Lord might need from you at this very hour as you read these lines – your decision and the confession of your mouth! Will you do it? Will you move your mouth? You do not have to understand how the Lord will do it! You have to believe that He knows what to do and how to do it and will start doing it immediately based on your decision and confession of your mouth.

May the Lord help us all to consider the above diligently in our heart and mind and conscience. May we decide by our free will to do what is our part of our Salvation thus allowing the Lord to do in us His part of our Salvation.

n) ONE OF THE MOST INTRIGUING and mysterious questions that we may ponder before Our Father is the following: What is our “old man”, our sinful nature, our sin all about? What is its true origin, its beginning, its essence, its character? Why it cannot be changed, abandoned or reversed? How can we understand it? I will share with you my vision received from the Lord concerning the beginnings of SIN as a principle, as law and as nature. It may prove important and very useful for us to see these spiritual matters as they may also give us deeper and clearer understanding of the very same processes which are taking place within us.

We must translate ourselves to the “time” well before the foundations of the world when evil had been already created, but SIN did not exist as yet. Then God created Lucifer, a Heavenly being so perfect and beautiful that, in my faith and vision, he stood just below the Son of God, below the WORD. There was no one in the whole creation of God, who would have been closer to the perfection and beauty of the Son of God than Lucifer. (**Ez. 28:12-14**) BUT he was not created in the Image of God as Adam was!

And then one “day”, Lucifer “became aware” of his beauty and wisdom and perfection with which he was created. He also observed his status and position and compared it to that of the Son of God. And when for the first

time he started to compare, he became aware of his sense of dissatisfaction, jealousy, which sense came to him seemingly out of “nowhere”. There was never such a thing as “dissatisfaction” in Heaven before. Dissatisfaction as such is not sin, but it is “skirting” sin, it starts from something which is not “kosher”. Lucifer started to slide into evil, which he was aware of as to its existence, but not as to its awesome power, effects and consequences. These were not known as they never existed before Lucifer and only God could foresee or foreknow these consequences. It is not recorded whether God had ever warned Lucifer about the power, effects and consequences of evil. The fact is that Lucifer began to be drawn into it ever so slowly but surely, here a little and there a little... the same way as we have to draw ourselves out from it. (Is. 28:9,10) It thus seems that once we start sliding into evil, no one can stop us or reverse the slide... except God (see also Chapter 9^[11] for details).

Finally, at some point in “time”, he became truly jealous of the Son of God because of His Greater Wisdom, Greater Beauty, Greater Perfection, Greater Status, Higher Position and Authority in the Universe bringing great worship to Him. He began to desire to be “like Him”. At that same point, a SPIRIT OF SIN, and of inequity was “BORN” in him, which spirit had never existed before. In order to be born, that new spirit of Sin needed both EVIL AND A LIVING BEING which would accept and begin to live that evil. So, the spirit of sin may also be visualized as “evil that had become alive”, that found its living expression. It produces a NEW KIND OF LIVING BEING that had never existed before Lucifer.

Let us try to visualize this spiritual fact by the following example. When a drop of the true Holy anointing oil is put into water, the water becomes tainted white; its nature is changed forever, you cannot take that white taint out of it. When a “drop of evil” is received by a created life, it also becomes “tainted”; its nature is changed for ever and you cannot take that “evil” out of it. EVIL absorbed by a created LIFE may be called the SPIRIT OF SIN. Two “ingredients” are required here to create a third, brand new “ingredient”.

Let us SEE and understand that SIN in its disposition is not a thing or an act, it is a SPIRIT THAT CHANGES THE NATURE OF ANY LIVING THING. When the heart of Lucifer was “lifted up” because of his beauty, PRIDE WAS “BORN” in him as the FIRST FRUIT AND THUS THE CHIEF CHARACTER OF THE NEW SPIRIT OF SIN IN HIM! This is the exact opposite of the Character of God and of His Spirit Whose first fruit is Love which is the chief Character of God. Hence, the SPIRIT OF SIN had become the chief enemy of the SPIRIT OF GOD in all his ways. It opposes Him in all things and resists Him in all things. Pride had become the chief feature of the character of Satan and of man.

This SPIRIT OF SIN became in Lucifer a SEED producing an “embryo” of the NATURE OF SIN. It started to grow in Lucifer into a PERSON OF SIN. This person of sin may be thus visualized as a MATURED FRUIT OF THE SPIRIT OF SIN! Such a being then becomes a true SON OF EVIL.

This process is in its principle similar to the process of our Salvation where the SPIRIT OF GOD had become in us a Heavenly SEED which produced in us an “embryo” of the NATURE OF GOD. It is then supposed to grow in us into a NEW MAN – PERSON OF LOVE, JOY, PEACE, FAITH, LONGSUFFERING, GENTLENESS, GOODNESS, MEEKNESS and TEMPERANCE. This believer becomes a MATURED FRUIT OF THE SPIRIT OF GOD! (**Gal. 5:22,23**) and a true and perfect SON OF GOD.

When that altogether “NEW CREATURE OF EVIL” began to grow in Lucifer, it was the beginning of an irreversible and tragic change in Lucifer’s personality. He must have been aware of his own desires, but not necessarily of his pride and that he was about to sin against God, Whom he still may have served just before he sinned against Him. Sin and pride had not existed before, they were “unknown elements” in Heaven, not seen, not experienced, therefore, not understood and not perceived in their character and danger... except by God. And then this “NEW CREATURE OF EVIL” in Lucifer had matured into the person of SATAN, THE SON OF EVIL, THE SON OF PERDITION. (**Jn. 17:12// 2Thes. 2:3**). The character of Lucifer was completely changed.

When his jealousy led Lucifer to his first free-will decision in his heart ("**he said in his heart**"), the very first SIN AS ACT in God's Creation was "BORN" (Is. 14:12-14) It was the first fruit of the SPIRIT OF SIN in general and of the spirit of pride and jealousy in particular. When we are jealous of somebody and have wrong desires that this jealousy produces, sin lies at our "door". When we start taking steps to execute these wrong desires and jealousy, the sin enters into our "living room". (Jam. 1:14,15; "*when lust is conceived*" = when we **say in our heart**) Lucifer was perfect in all his ways until this sin of iniquity was found in him. (Ez. 28:15)

BEFORE LUCIFER, EVIL EXISTED AS IT WERE A POISON IN A CLOSED BOTTLE. IT NEEDED SOMEONE TO OPEN THE BOTTLE TO BEGIN ITS DESTRUCTIVE FUNCTION, TO BEGIN TO GROW ITS OWN "FRUIT OF DESTRUCTION". IN LUCIFER, EVIL HAD FINALLY FOUND ITS "LIVING EXPRESSION, ITS FRUIT" IN HAVING BEEN ABSORBED AND THUS LIVED BY A LIVING CREATURE. THE FRUIT OF THE **HOLY SPIRIT** IS DESCRIBED IN Gal. 5:22,23. THE FRUIT OF THE **EVIL SPIRIT** OF SIN IS THE EXACT OPPOSITE OF THE FRUIT OF THE HOLY SPIRIT.

BUT FRUIT CAN ONLY BE PRODUCED BY A LIVING THING OR BEING. WE THEN CONCLUDE THAT SATAN AND HIS CHARACTER HAD BECOME AN IMPERSONATED EVIL. IT IS PRECISELY **THIS CHARACTER** THAT WAS PLANTED INTO ADAM AND EVE BASED ON THEIR CHOICE TO DISOBEY GOD. THIS **EVIL CHARACTER REPLACED THE CHARACTER OF GOD AND HIS SPIRIT** IN THE SPIRIT, SOUL AND BODY OF ADAM AND EVE. **THIS WAS THE WORK OF THE DEVIL!** IT BECAME HIS GREAT VICTORY SINCE NO MAN COULD REVERSE THIS ACT OR EXTRICATE HIMSELF FROM THIS EVIL CHARACTER. THE DEVIL THUS GAINED THE POWER OF DEATH (HEB. 2:14), IN OTHER WORDS, THE ABILITY TO (ETERNALLY) SEPARATE OTHER LIVING CREATURES FROM GOD. THIS IS HOW DEATH AND SATAN'S POWER OF IT ARE TO BE INTERPRETED AND UNDERSTOOD IN THE SCRIPTURE.

Let us also SEE and understand that this SPIRIT OF SIN has its own intelligence, mind, will and power which it re-

ceived from its “father” Lucifer at its conception, and from its “father” Satan at its maturity. This Archangel had great intelligence and power ruling (weakening) nations. (Is. 14:12) We should not be surprised that this spirit of sin is so cunningly intelligent and powerful that man has no chance to perceive its cunning character and deceptions, subdue them, overcome them or extricate himself from their grip.

THIS **SPIRIT OF SIN** WHICH “PRODUCED” SATAN, THE SON OF EVIL, **HAD BECOME THE LIFE OF MAN**, THE LIFE OF HIS “NEW SINFUL NATURE”. THE SPIRIT OF EVIL HAD CLAIMED NOT ONLY LUCIFER, THE ANNOINTED CHERUB THAT WAS SET UPON THE HOLY MOUNTAIN OF GOD, (**Ez. 28:14**) BUT IT WAS NOW CLAIMING EVERY MAN BORN TO THIS WORLD AS IT COULD REPRODUCE ITS SEED OF CORRUPTION INTO EVERY NEW LIVING BEING BORN OF ADAM AND EVE!

The “sinful virtues” of the SPIRIT OF SIN (pride, arrogance, selfishness, stubbornness, disobedience, foolishness, fears and all the rest) are called the “FLESH” or the “old man”. Flesh opposes God in every way and at all times, it is His eternal Enemy which influences every man and is the source and cause of his eternal death (separation from God) and thus of his eternal damnation and suffering.

This is the evolution of evil and its effects and the true depth of tragedy of any living creature that is in the grip of its tentacles. There was no way back, there was no way to save man... except one!

o) NOW WE MAY COME to Our Father and give Him the most true and heartfelt thanks for His Way of our Salvation! He created a way where there was “no way”... in the eyes of Satan, that is.

Let us now consider the Greatest Mystery and Victory of God that there is or that there ever could be concerning man. Let us also see ourselves in this mystery of our Salvation and the absolutely matchless sacrifice of Our Savior Jesus Christ. Let us also SEE the unfathomable Wisdom and Love of Our Father in His Great Salvation of man.

God had two steps to do to bring this sinful man back to His Presence, make him His son again and live with him eternally as the First Adam was supposed to live had he not fallen into sin. God had to:

1) redeem the sinful man from Satan's possession in paying the full price required by God by His Principles of legality, holiness and righteousness so that He would remain Holy and Righteous and beyond any accusations by Satan or his fallen angels, and...

2) once the man was redeemed, He had to give him the sure means to change his sinful nature back to God's Nature by the same free-will choice by which man lost God's Spirit and His Nature and gained the spirit of sin and its nature.

We all know the first step since all true believers are redeemed by the death and resurrection of Our Saviour. So, this step is completed in all true believers. We should also know the second step and this step should also be completed. It is completed in Christ, but not necessarily in us!

I have living experiences that in some believers this second step may have not even started! THIS IS THE TRAGEDY of these believers. And I believe that the chief reason for this tragedy is this deep deception, and the reason for this deep deception is pride and willful ignorance of man.

About four years ago, when the Lord led me to write the book "Word to the Church of Jesus Christ^[8]", I already had the vision of "two crosses" as a Scriptural fact which fact I then incorporated in that book to some degree. But my vision at that time was not clear. There was always something missing in it, something was incomplete and I did not know what. That "something" has now been revealed to me by the Grace of Our Lord and it is a very important spiritual fact which we are now called to apprehend into our understanding and faith. It should help us tremendously in SEEING truth about our Salvation through Christ. How the "WORKS OF THE DEVIL WERE DESTROYED" by Christ and how they MUST be destroyed in us also by the Power of God! This fact should give us the necessary spiritual understanding of THE

DEEPEST MYSTERY OF THE SALVATION OF MAN and thus facilitate making our specific decisions in our heart and mind and will. These are the decisions which Our Father requires from us as our part of our Salvation. Also, this unmasks the deepest and most successful deception of Satan perpetrated within the Church of Jesus Christ ever since the beginning of the Church and of the New Testament!

Those four years ago I sincerely believed and understood that “the cup that the Father was giving to Jesus to drink” was the Cross. Three times Our Saviour asked His Father to “REMOVE THAT CUP FROM HIM”! (Lk. 22:42) But already at that time, I did not “feel good” about equating the cup with His physical death on the Cross. Jesus knew well His destiny that He will be killed and also drink a cup and the third day He will rise again. (Mk. 9:31// Mt. 20:22// Mk. 10:38)

He was prepared for the Cross and did not question it. He was also prepared to drink the cup, but for some reason, HE QUESTIONED THE CUP that His Father was giving to Him to “drink”. He, Who never knew sin, loathed and feared the CUP in the very depth of His Soul and Spirit! For that reason, He asked His Father to “REMOVE THIS CUP” from Him saying also: “IF THOU BE WILLING” indicating clearly that it was not the will-desire of Jesus. As I SEE in my spirit, Jesus the Man was not truly ready for “THIS CUP”. He had to be strengthened by an Angel from Heaven. (Lk. 22:43,44) This also may explain why He made such an unusual request to His Father and that three times in a row! So, what was THIS CUP, if it was not the Cross?

GOD HAD NOT ONLY TAKEN OUR SINS AND PUT THEM ON CHRIST AND CRUCIFIED THEM ON HIS CROSS. NO! THAT WOULD NOT HAVE CONSTITUTED THE FULL SALVATION OF MAN. IT WOULD HAVE ONLY EXTENDED TO MAN THE FORGIVENESS OF HIS SINS AND HIS RECONCILIATION WITH GOD. BUT **SUCH A REDEEMED MAN WOULD HAVE KEPT SINNING FOR EVER AND WOULD HAVE NEEDED AN ETERNAL FORGIVENESS! WHY?**

FORGIVENESS OF SINS AND RECONCILIATION WITH GOD **DOES NOT DESTROY MAN'S SINFUL NATURE! HIS "OLD MAN" WOULD HAVE SURVIVED! THE WORKS OF THE DEVIL WOULD NOT HAVE BEEN DESTROYED! THEREFORE...**

GOD HAD MADE HIS SON TO **BECOME SIN** FOR US (2Cor. 5:21), TO BECOME A SINFUL SOUL, TO BECOME EXACTLY AS ONE OF US, TO RECEIVE THE POWERFUL, CUNNING, EVIL SPIRIT OF SIN, TO RECEIVE THAT SNAKE WITH ITS VENOM, TO RECEIVE OUR SINFUL NATURE TOGETHER WITH ALL OUR SINS, INIQUITIES AND EVIL DEEDS **INTO HIS ABSOLUTELY HOLY, PURE AND SINLESS SOUL!**

THAT WAS THE CUP THE FATHER WAS GIVING HIM TO "DRINK" AND WHICH HE HESITATED TO DRINK, BUT DESIRED THREE TIMES THAT IT WOULD BE REMOVED FROM HIM!

THAT WAS THE GREATEST AND DEEPEST SUFFERING OF OUR LORD ACCOMPANIED BY UNIMAGINABLE PAIN AND HORROR INCLUDING BEING CURSED, (Deut. 21:23// Gal. 3:13) BEING FORSAKEN AND SEPARATED FROM HIS OWN BELOVED FATHER IN HEAVEN! (Mt. 27:46) IT IS FAR BEYOND ALL OUR IMAGINATION AND COMPREHENSION AND ANY HUMAN SENSES.

BUT BY POURING **THAT** SOUL UNTO DEATH, (Is. 53:12) HE **THEREBY DESTROYED SIN AS LAW** (Rom. 7:23; 8:2) **AND AS NATURE AND CURSE** AND BROUGHT THE OLD SOULISH MAN, HIS FLESH, HIS SINFUL NATURE TO DEATH! HE ALSO **THEREBY DESTROYED ALL THE WORKS OF THE DEVIL** (1Jn. 3:8) BY TAKING ALL THE GROUND OF HIS ACTIVITY AND ALL HIS "VICTORY" IN EVERY HUMAN BEING AWAY FROM HIM AND HE MADE US FREE FROM IT ALL. (Rom. 6:18,22)

HE REPLACED THE SOULISH-SINFUL MAN WITH THE SPIRITUAL-SINLESS MAN. THAT NEW SPIRITUAL MAN LIVES BY THE SPIRIT OF GOD AND SATAN HAS **NOTHING** IN HIM! (Jn. 14:30)

DO WE SEE THIS TRUTH IN OUR SPIRIT AND SOUL? CAN WE IMAGINE THIS ACT OF OUR SAVIOUR AND SEE AND UNDERSTAND THE TRUE DEPTH OF THIS SACRIFICE? THERE IS NO WAY FOR ANY MAN TO SEE AND UNDERSTAND THAT. LET US REPEAT THE MOST IMPORTANT TRUTH ABOUT OUR SALVATION:

WHEN WE DIED WITH CHRIST BY THE WILL OF GOD, OUR SINFUL NATURE WAS DESTROYED IN CHRIST IN ITS ENTIRETY, IN OUR SPIRIT, SOUL AND BODY. IN GOD'S WILL, OUR OLD BEING SOAKED WITH EVIL, DOES NOT EXIST ANY MORE! AT THE SAME TIME, IN CHRIST GOD CREATED FOR US A NEW MAN, HOLY, RIGHTEOUS AND SINLESS MAN WHOM WE ARE TO PUT ON AND LIVE. (Eph. 4:24// 2Cor.5:17)

THAT IS OUR SALVATION AND NOTHING ELSE!
(Gal. 6:14-16// Rom. 6:6,7)

ARE WE DOING IT? **NO!** THAT IS WHY WE NEED GOD'S **FIRE** TO WAKE US UP FROM OUR DEEP SLEEP, DEEP DECEPTION, DEEP UNWILLINGNESS TO INTERRUPT OUR COMFORTABLE CHRISTIAN DREAMS, TO DIE TO EVIL AND BE RESURRECTED.

The CROSS OF CHRIST is the only way out of the POSSESSION AND NATURE OF SATAN back to the POSSESSION AND NATURE OF GOD and God had provided this Redemption and Salvation POTENTIALLY for all men born to this world, especially to them that believe. (1Tim. 4:10)

OUR CROSS is the only way out of the NATURE OF SATAN back to the NATURE OF GOD and God had provided this Salvation POTENTIALLY for every born-again believer, who will overcome and die to his nature of Satan by his own will and decision.

WHEN WE ACCEPT BY FAITH WHAT GOD HAD DONE FOR US IN CHRIST, THEN WE STILL HAVE TO WORK OUT THIS FAITH IN OUR LIFE. THE REPLACEMENT OF SATAN BY GOD, THE REPLACEMENT OF OUR OLD MAN BY OUR NEW MAN MUST BE DONE IN US BY US AND BY THE SPIRIT OF GOD. OUR TRUTHFUL COOPERATION WITH THE SPIRIT OF GOD IS CRUCIAL IN THIS "UNSEEN BATTLE" FOR OUR SOUL.

p) LET US NOW SEE and receive from the Lord the following spiritual facts and truths.

- Our New Man is NOT living in us at the time when we are redeemed. He is waiting for us IN Christ and we have to put him on by growing up into Christ in all things! (Eph. 4:15) The Lord says we can only grow up into Him on the narrow way.

- When we are fully saved we, as it were, come to where the First Adam and Lucifer were before the spirit of sin, the law of sin, the nature of sin existed. If we are bold enough, we may now ask Our Father what guarantee He has that we would not again fall into sin as Lucifer and Adam did? What difference would there be between us? The Lord says that there is a very basic and also very great difference between us and it is the following.

Lucifer and Adam were CREATED BY GOD and thus capable of sinning, but we are BORN OF GOD, and here the Word says:

“Whosoever is born of God does not commit sin; for HIS SEED remains in him, and he cannot sin, because he is BORN OF GOD”. (Jn. 1:12, 13// 1Jn. 3:9// 1Pet. 1:23) THAT is Our Father’s guarantee and also ours.

- How and why could Lucifer fall into sin being sinless, spotless, perfect and nobody tempted him? The Lord says that Lucifer DID NOT LOVE! God is love, but Lucifer was never love; he therefore never knew in himself what true love was or what the fruit of true love was, such as, compassion, patience, longsuffering, meekness or goodness.

So, one may be perfect and yet wicked; one may be perfect and a “piece of stone” in place of his heart. True believers are commanded by God to love because they are born of Him, Who is Love. But those created by God and not born of Him were never commanded to love God with all their heart and mind and soul and strength. So, Lucifer, as well as the First Adam, never truly and selflessly loved God and THAT ALONE made them prone to sin, able to sin and fall into sin even in their state of “outward perfection”.

- How could God legally, morally and righteously justify His way of the Salvation of man before Satan and his fallen angels? The Lord says that the ***“soul that sins, it shall die”*** (Ez. 18:4) But here, in Christ Jesus, was a SOUL THAT HAD NOT SINNED AND DIED! Therefore, the Father was not obliged legally, morally or righteously to leave Jesus in the hands of Satan and in his power of death, separation. He called Jesus back to Himself in raising Him from the dead and seating Him on His Throne in Heaven. That is how Our Lord had also destroyed the power of death by destroying him who had the power of death, the Devil. (Heb. 2:14b)

- Christ Jesus had made it POSSIBLE for us all to do likewise without being crucified physically... if we are IN Him truly, livingly, organically and not just doctrinally. It is our decision to live in Him or to be “in Him” only in our mental knowledge, conviction, wish or understanding. The Lord says that THIS DECISION of our heart, mind and will was NOT MADE ON HIS CROSS! Only the conditions for its outworking in us were provided there.

- The Lord says that TWO MEN are living in every born-again believer: the FIRST ADAM in his soul and body and the LAST ADAM in his spirit. They are not friends, they are enemies. Their names may also be considered as, respectively, Death and Life, Darkness and Light, Lie and Truth, Disobedience and Obedience, Hate and Love. They are opposites in every sense of the word. The First Adam found his death (and his new life) in the Last Adam.

Every believer is a divided personality and this division, this disunity, disharmony, disorder and independence is also brought into man's relationships including his marriage; and then into his family where his children also become disobedient, independent, disunited, divided. And then it is brought into his community and then into “his church” and finally into the whole Christianity. The selfishness of the First Adam has not disappeared, but reigns in the soul of every believer. Some believers may be aware of it, but they have no power to do anything about it, if they do

not seek the Last Adam in their spirit to bring them back to unity, harmony, order and interdependence.

As a true born-again believer, which Adam will you allow to live in you and through you? Which one will you love and which one will you hate? Which one will you be united with, married to, the First Adam or the Last Adam? Have you already made your final choice? You see, these are not trivial questions and your answers may only be your wishes, but not definite decisions of your soul. How can you know? Compare your answer with your living experiences, decisions and deeds in your everyday life. You will see which decision of your soul they correspond to. The Lord says that you are neither the First Adam, nor the Last Adam, but you are YOU! And YOU must make this definite choice one day which, hopefully, will not be too late.

If you have chosen the Last Adam, you have done well. Your choice was undoubtedly made because it is also common sense, it is logical, it answers to your personal desires, wishes and to your faith and convictions. Little do we realize that we might be confusing this choice with accepting Jesus Christ into our life as our Saviour. This latter choice resulted in our Redemption and in being born-again by His Spirit and maybe also in our water baptism by immersion. But by this choice we had not become His Bride and had not decided to do (and have not done) all that is necessary for us to spend our eternity with Him.

The Lord says that...

WE MAY BE REDEEMED BY HIS BLOOD AND RECEIVE HIS SPIRIT, HIS LIFE, INTO OUR SPIRIT AND YET <u>CONTINUE LIVING IN OUR SOUL</u> THE LIFE OF THE FIRST ADAM AND LOVE THE FIRST ADAM MORE THAN THE LAST ADAM(!) AND BE SATISFIED WITH THE LIFE OF THE FIRST ADAM AND NOT BE AWARE OF THIS TRUTH! CAN YOU BELIEVE THE LORD SAYING THIS FACT TO US?

How many believers desire to escape hell and death while they continue living their old earthly life? They have their own dreams, imaginations, desires, expectations and plans as to how they would like to live their "Christian life".

They would not allow anything and anybody to change their kind of life and would resist any attempt to interfere with it. In other words, they desire Jesus Christ to be their Saviour, but not their Lord! Oh, they all call Him Lord, Lord (**Mt. 7:21// Lk. 6:46**), but they do not allow Him to change their life, to ruin their natural dreams, imaginations, desires, expectations, plans and replace them with His Reality. Are you one of them? It must be a life of perpetual frustrations and misery.

We all know that OUR NATURE DESIRES to continue in its own life and refuses any changes and anything new! The Lord says that for such, old wine (old life) is better than the new wine (new life)! (**Lk. 5:39**) The question is: how long will it take us to even start tasting that new wine? WE ALL WILL LOSE THE OLD LIFE, both pagans and believers; it will just be a matter of time. (**Mt. 16:25**) So, another question is: what life shall they live then, when they lose their old life and not gain the new life from God? All such people will live a “third kind” of life, which will be a “life”, or rather an “existence” of unimaginable horror, misery, sufferings, pain and eternal hopelessness in the fire and brimstone. This will be incomparably worse than any miserable, old life that they might have lived here on earth. They would then gladly abandon their “old earthly life”, but it will be too late. Satan has far greater chances than we might believe.

r) PRAYER IS a true mystery and a deep spiritual issue though it may seem to be a rather simple thing. There are a number of passages in the Word where the Lord gives us either the way or manner in which to pray (**Mt. 6:9-13// Eph. 1:15-18// Col. 1:9-12**, etc.) or even “unbelievable” promises. (see **Mt. 18:19// Jn. 14:13,14; 15:7,16b; 16:24**, etc.) But many times we may pray according to those promises of God and receive nothing. Why? The Lord hears the prayers of the righteous (**Pr. 15:29**), those that had not departed from their righteousness and had not committed iniquity, (**Ez. 3:20**) and every prayer that He hears, He answers! But we may not hear His answer or comprehend it.

I see at least three basic reasons why our prayers may bring no results and they are the following:

1 - We may ask and not receive because we ASK AMISS, wrongly, inappropriately, for wrong, unrighteous or foolish reasons to satisfy our lusts (physical or mental), to satisfy our wrong or foolish desires, intentions or plans, or we may ask things that would damage our spirit rather than benefit it. (Jam. 4:3) We may also be proud, whom God resists (Jam. 4:6b) or we regard iniquity in our heart. (Ps. 66: 18) Such prayers the Lord does not even hear.

2 - We may ask WITHOUT FAITH, not believing in our heart and spirit. (Mt. 21:22// Jam. 1:6,7) We may hope or wish for the answer, but we have no faith, which is given to us by the Lord when we are looking at Him. (Heb. 12:2) When the Lord knows that we will ask Him an inappropriate prayer, a foolish thing, He will not give us the necessary faith for it. Therefore, "**whatsoever**" (in Jn. 14:14, etc.) is not "*whatsoever we may desire in our soul*", but whatsoever is wise and needful and righteous and profitable to us or to others and thus within the Will of the Lord. We cannot easily distinguish faith from our mental beliefs or convictions. Hence, we often have to learn this lesson of our faith through seemingly unanswered prayers.

3 – We may ask and not realize that WHENEVER WE PRAY FOR WHATEVER IS GOOD, DESIRABLE, PROFITABLE AND IN THE WILL OF THE LORD, WE AUTOMATICALLY BECOME RESPONSIBLE PARTICIPANTS TO HIS ANSWER AND TO HIS SOLUTION TO OUR PRAYER.

The Lord's answer is usually subjected to conditions involving the praying believer and any others that may be involved in the solution sought after. If I pray for something that I am not yet ready to receive in spirit, soul or body, then I must wait (whatever time it may take) and be willing to follow the Lord's way and guidance to be changed sufficiently in my spirit or soul or body in order to receive His answer. Otherwise I will never have it. If I pray for others, the Lord may require from me certain necessary changes, certain responsibility or action to be taken. He requires my participation in His solution so that He could fulfill my request in those others. This is very important to see and understand!

If you are concerned, for example, about your marriage which may be heading for disaster and you decide to pray, the Lord will always require both parties to be willing to go His way, be guided by His Spirit and abandon their old ways. I do not believe that there is any case where only one spouse would be guilty, possibly excluding the case of fornication. (Mt. 19:9) It is always both spouses that are guilty one way or another not necessarily in their outward deeds, but always in their spirit! It is either the spirit of pride, stubbornness, lust, selfishness, disobedience to the Word, religious extremism, lack of love or faith or grace or meekness or compassion, etc. There is not one spouse that would not be guilty in the eyes of the Lord in any way. Abandon the idea that one spouse is an angel and the other one a devil.

Therefore, any prayer for the restoration of any marriage involves also the person that prays. He/she has to change also his/her old ways, old convictions, old beliefs and old spirits that may have easily caused this condition in their marriage in the first place. It may involve other persons like in-laws, friends, etc., who may have contributed to or started this condition. The Lord is the only One, Who knows what is involved, why it came to this state and what its only solution is.

THE LORD CAN RESTORE ANYTHING IF WE DESIRE to come to Him and ask Him and be obedient to His Word and ways and judgments. There are so many divorced Christian marriages and so much adultery that it is a true tragedy in His Church. And it is so solely because the Lord was not a living part of those marriages; hence, the devil had a large field of opportunities for his destructive activities in their souls which were open to him.

Ask the Lord which one of the above reasons may be the factor for you not receiving His answer to your prayer.

s) TRUE SPIRITUALITY of believers is another mystery and an important issue which is clouded in a thick deception and causes serious misunderstandings among true believers. What is the main basis of this deception and what is the true spirituality of a believer?

When we see some one casting out devils from some one else, we stand in awe and are persuaded that this is a truly spiritual man and a great servant of God. The same may happen when we see some one healing the sick or prophesying or speaking in tongues or interpreting tongues or doing some miracles in the Name of the Lord. This is our natural reaction and many years ago I was doing the same seeing such acts in my former churches or during various crusades or missionary activities or on television.

Even greater deception may be present when we witness some one displaying great spiritual knowledge or wisdom or faith or the ability to discern spirits. We have no doubt that such men are gifted from above and thus highly spiritual. The truth is that they are gifted from above, but not necessarily spiritual! How is this possible?

The Lord desires that we would see and understand the following spiritual facts:

1 – Some of the nine gifts of the Spirit described in **1Cor. 12:8-10** are given to all true born-again believers that they may profit withal. They are given to the obedient ones and also to the rebellious ones! (**Ps. 68:18**) There are many believers that don't know what gifts they had received and they may not even care to know and to use them for their own benefit and also for the benefit of others.

2 – All nine gifts are spiritual gifts; they are the manifestation of the Spirit. (**1Cor. 12:7**) We may possess and use the gift of spiritual knowledge or spiritual wisdom and they are not human, intellectual knowledge or wisdom, but spiritual. We may discern various kinds of spirits which no man with his natural abilities is able to do. It is therefore very easy and natural to consider such believers spiritual.

3 – Apostle Paul exhorts us to even covet earnestly the best gifts. But then he attaches to this sentence a small almost insignificant note stating ***“and yet show I unto you a more excellent way.”*** (**1Cor. 12:31**) What is that more excellent way? It is the way of a TRUE SPIRITUALITY and it is the way of the FRUITS and not of the gifts!

4 – What follows that small, insignificant note in the last verse of chapter 12 is, of course, chapter 13, which describes this more excellent way and gives important details why it is so! All gifts are like tools to benefit us and they all are temporary and will cease or fail **“when that which is perfect is come...”** (1Cor. 13:10) Should we have nothing more than gifts and no fruits, we would appear before the Lord empty-handed. Our spiritual knowledge and wisdom which we have cherished and maybe even worshipped and which others admired in us shall vanish away! Our prophecies which we prophesied, perhaps, to large congregations or TV audiences shall fail! Our tongues and their interpretations will cease! (1Cor. 13:8b)

THOUGH WE WOULD HAVE ALL THE GIFTS OF THE SPIRIT AND MINISTER THEM TO MANY OTHERS AND HAVE NO LOVE, WE WOULD STILL BE NOTHING! (1Cor. 13:2)

5 – The only thing that will never fail is LOVE (1Cor. 13:8a) and the other fruit of the Spirit. (Gal. 5:22,23) This fruit is eternal and will never cease or vanish. Therefore...

THE GIFTS OF THE SPIRIT DO NOT MAKE US SPIRITUAL EVEN IF WE USE THEM TO PROFIT OTHERS. GIFTS ALONE CAN NOT TRANSFORM US INTO THE IMAGE OF CHRIST!

THE FRUIT OF THE SPIRIT MAKES US SPIRITUAL. THE FRUIT ALONE CAN TRANSFORM US INTO THE IMAGE OF CHRIST.

Our Lord never needed any gifts of the Spirit to use during His ministry on the earth. He ministered by the Spirit Himself, Who is the Giver of all these gifts. HE WAS, AND IS, THE SOURCE, THE SPRING of all knowledge and wisdom and faith and healing (and life itself) and miracles and prophecies and discernment of spirits and tongues and their interpretation! He did not heal the man, who was born blind, He recreated his vision; (Jn. 9:1-7) He did not heal the 12 year old damsel, He gave her a new life (Mk. 5:39-42), so He did with Lazarus (Jn. 11:43,44). HE was spiritual not because He did miracles, but because He lived by the Spirit of God.

A believer may be a “great servant of the Lord” that may preach His Word in the gift of knowledge and wisdom, he may prophesy in His Name, he may heal people or cast out devils in His Name, he may use other gifts of the Spirit and do many wonderful works in His Name and at the same time... he may NOT KNOW THE LORD! And if he does not know the Lord, the Lord does not know him and he is declared by the Lord a “worker of iniquity” and will have to depart from the Lord! (**Mt. 7:22,23**) Furthermore, if we do not know the Lord, we cannot love Him and, if we do not love Him, we will be cursed (this was discussed earlier). Clearly no such believer can be considered spiritual.

Even the gift of faith (**1Cor. 12:9a**) will be replaced by the fruit of faith (**Gal. 5:22b**) as all gifts are given to us at our spiritual birthday and are limited in their scope for our spiritual childhood. As we mature in our spirit and grow the fruit of the Spirit, the use of our gifts is diminishing. Our ministry must be done through the FRUIT of the Spirit, chiefly love, not only by using gifts, including faith. (**Gal. 5:6b// Eph. 4:15**)

t) OUR WALK on the narrow way or running our race set before us by the Father may be hampered or altogether prevented by two things: WEIGHTS that we carry and SINS that we commit. (**Heb. 12:1**) Looking unto Jesus the Author and Finisher of our faith enables us to receive from Him the necessary faith-light about both our weights and our sins (**Heb. 12:2a**) and how to lay them aside.

In the past we may have believed that it is only our sins that stand in our way to our spiritual maturing and perfection, to our true knowledge of the Son of God and of our fellowship with Him. Therefore, we were guided by **1Jn. 1:9** where the Word tells us that ***“if we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.”***

This Word is true, yet our limited understanding, or rather misunderstanding, of what sin is and what weight is could still stand in our way and keep us rather efficiently from knowing the Lord as a Person, have a truly spiritual

fellowship with Him and also minister Him to others. Therefore, it is important for us to see and understand that the above Word (1Jn. 1:9) is preceded by verses 1-8 which are no less true and no less important for all of us!

If we would only consider another Word of God which says **“for whatsoever is not of faith is sin”**, (Rom. 14:23b) we would appreciate the Word in 1Jn. 1:8 much more and understand it much better. If we would consider yet another Word of God which says **“the thought of foolishness is sin”**, (Prov. 24:9) we should start realizing that we may be sinning daily and have no conscience of it!

The same applies to our weights. We may carry them being completely unaware what we are carrying with us and that they are standing between Our Lord and ourselves. During my entire life, I have never seen any athlete running a race carrying heavy suitcases in his hands and having hope to come to the finish line. Yet, that is what we, believers, are doing and are not aware of it. So, what are some of the weights that we carry with us? How do we recognize them and lay them aside?

We will turn for help to another Word of God, namely, Jam. 1:14,15 where we are told **“But every man is tempted, when he is drawn away of his own lust, and enticed. Then when the lust has conceived, it brings forth sin: and sin, when it is finished, brings forth death.”**

What does this Word mean to us? We all are tempted and we all have lusts in our souls which are capable to draw us away and bring us into sin. Now, neither temptation nor the existence of lusts in our soul is sin! Even being drawn away by our lusts is not sin as yet, but sin lies ahead. So...

THE VARIOUS LUSTS IN OUR SOUL ARE THE WEIGHTS THAT WE CARRY AND WHICH MAY TURN INTO SINS ANY TIME! OUR WEIGHTS-LUSTS ARE NOT SINS, BUT THEY LEAD US INTO SINS.

The question that we ought to ask ourselves is: *Are we aware of our weights?* And: *Are we aware when they*

turn into sins? I believe that we may know the answer partially and inadequately. We know and recognize the most natural and common weights-lusts of our bodies and souls and there is no need to bring them into an additional light. But there are probably many lusts, which we may not be aware of or consider them as weights standing in our way which way was set before us by the Lord. If they slow down a believer in his maturing process it is not good, but it may not be so tragic. If they stop believers from moving ahead or even reverse their progress... that is tragic. If they stop the leaders that preach, teach and influence thousands or millions of believers around the world or even reverse their spiritual growth that is a great tragedy in the Church and a great loss to the Lord. We will therefore concentrate on some of these weights-lusts which affect our ministry. It goes without saying that they also affect the life of all individual believers whether they minister or not.

First, what is a weight-lust? It is a power in us which has a potential to draw us to do something unrighteous, foolish, immoral, unjust, dangerous or damaging to others or to ourselves, or something unnecessary wasting time and energy, something that may be evil in itself or may not be evil at all. It may also draw us into extremes of something which in itself may be normal and good even necessary such as eating food. But we may end up either in anorexia or in gluttony both being extremes to something normal, but now being damaging to our health.

We cannot control our weights-lusts permanently or efficiently by our own power of strong will, we need to be delivered from them by the Power of Christ. Yet, we may not always want His deliverance or ask for it because we either love our particular lust or we may not be aware that what moves us or controls us is a (deep seated) lust.

We may see and understand the lust of gluttony or drunkenness or laziness or adultery or idolatry or any other common lusts, but we may not see or be aware that, for example, our stubbornness is a lust. When we hold to our own knowledge or opinions or convictions or beliefs as a pit-bull

holds a bone in his teeth, then we have a great lust and a great weight that we carry on our way. Also, our own understanding and our image may very easily become our very own idol; it may easily grow, for example, if we build a large ministry, a mega-church or if we start preaching on TV or become a “very important person”. Our “work for the Lord” may also become our idol and a weight that stops us from walking and growing and maturing in spirit.

For “ordinary” believers, their pastor or evangelist or miracle worker or other “famous and successful” religious personality may easily become their idol and they will follow him (or her?) blindly and go backwards rather than forward. Do we present such “idols” before the Lord and ask Him for His Judgment? **NO!** Why not? Because we do not present even ourselves before the Lord and ask Him for His Judgment of our own selves! Then we become like unto an athlete that would try to run a marathon pulling a loaded van behind him. Are you aware what weight you are carrying?

Let us consider one important aspect of our ministry which also applies to our everyday life. We all know that we should speak truth and not lies. Yet, we may speak truth in various unacceptable ways and spirits and we either speak it that way purposely or unaware. To edify or build up any believer spiritually, we must speak truth in love (Eph. 4:15) which is the fruit of the Spirit; it is not our human selfish love (this was already discussed earlier). The simplest reason is that ***“in Christ Jesus neither (physical) circumcision nor uncircumcision has any meaning, but FAITH THAT WORKS BY LOVE!”*** (Gal. 5:6) True faith spoken in true love has the only power and potential to educate and nourish and build believers into Christ Jesus. THERE IS NO OTHER WAY.

This fact is another deep spiritual issue so we will devote to it the necessary time and also ponder what our lusts and weights can do to it, if we do not “lay them aside”.

Love and faith are the most important fruit of the Spirit (Gal. 5:22) which grow in our New Man and are also most

desired by Our Lord. These two are represented by the two breasts of the Maiden of Shulamite which are like two young roes that are twins which feed among the lilies. (**S.Sol. 4:5**) Young roes are quick in response and in movement, but shy and easily frightened so we have to safeguard our faith and love from public exposure and keep them for the Lord and the brethren, whom the Lord appoints. Being twins means that they are equal in size, hence, we should not have great love and little faith or great faith and little love. Feeding on lilies means feeding on pure things; lilies here represent purity and holiness without which we shall not see the Lord. (**Heb. 12:14**)

The purity and holiness also applies to our conscience since true faith can only be held in a pure conscience. (**1Tim. 3:9**) When our conscience is defiled, then there is a loss of our faith and love. Our true faith and true love are the only things between which we can keep the Lord all night. (**S.Sol. 1:13**) The night here means spiritual darkness which will last until the Lord comes again. Also, faith and love are considered as equally important in the New Testament. (ex. **1Tim. 1:5,14// Philemon 5**) While her little sister had “no breasts”, the Maiden of Shulamite had “breasts like towers” and that’s how she found favour in the eyes of Her Beloved. (**S.Sol. 8:8,10**)

TO SPEAK TRUTH IS TO SPEAK TRUE FAITH SINCE TRUE FAITH IS LIGHT FROM THE LORD AND SHOWS TRUTH IN REALITY. THEREFORE, “SPEAKING TRUTH IN LOVE” MAY ALSO BE PARAPHRASED AS “SPEAKING TRUE FAITH IN LOVE”.

The meaning of the above is: If we have no true love, but have true faith, we may speak truth, but in various unacceptable spirits as shown below. If we have true love, but not true faith, we may speak in love, but not truth, rather, we speak what we understand or imagine to be truth. In neither case can we be successful and build up believers. Often we may have neither true love nor true faith.

The Lord desires that we would see and comprehend the effect of our weights-lusts on this very important spiritual

issue. We may easily speak truth, or rather partial truth, in various unacceptable spirits, for example:

a... in pride – showing off what we know, impressing people with what we understand or what people must learn and acquire in order to go on in their Christian life; to glean admiration or even worship from our followers, etc., but proud persons are never aware of this fact.

b... in fear – fearing the consequences of our speaking, fearing that people will not understand or that our image will suffer or we may lose our friends or we are not up to the task or in the right spirit, etc.

c... in doubt – doubting whether our speech would be received or would benefit, doubting our ability, etc.

d... in selfishness – we may not teach or preach because we love people, but we may want them to come back and support our ministry or bring to us some (vain) glory or enlarge our congregation; we may follow our own purposes, planning, desires or intentions which may be initially good or desirable in our beliefs and convictions, yet, they may be contrary to the desires and plans of Our Lord, etc.

e... in anger – we may have been hurt or accused and we feel strongly that we must defend ourselves or counter attack some one, who stubbornly stands on his convictions or motives, or we may try to correct where we failed the last time or revenge someone's opposition, etc.

f... in own beliefs – we may speak truth honestly and sincerely to give guidelines to believers to avoid pitfalls in their life, get rid of their obstacles, or may counsel them how to live a “victorious Christian life” or how to achieve prosperity, how to evangelize, how to help in religious activities, all that and more without necessarily loving them, etc.

g... we may also speak truth in jealousy, greediness, covetousness, (1Tim. 3:3) frustrations or arrogance or in combinations of any of the above spirits. When we speak truth in unacceptable spirits, it is always a partial truth or partial faith since such spirits cannot handle pure faith. Only pure love is able to speak pure faith, if we have that faith. So, we may have true faith, but true love is lacking or vice

versa; then our “breasts” are not equal in size, they are not twins. (**S.Sol. 4:5**) Now, a breast is a seat of nourishment and emotions. Faith and Love provide the right nourishment and also the right emotions to the true believers.

The result of our speaking truth in unacceptable spirits is that no one is spiritually growing up, spiritually educated or built up. People may be redeemed and may receive basic education, but maturing process is not possible. Such believers do not have the spiritual knowledge and capacity to progress, to know themselves, discern their own walk, own deeds and needs or battle the powers of darkness and evil. They may never become Overcomers during their earthly life as they lack the necessary faith-light, strength of their inner man and, not being rooted and grounded in love, they cannot comprehend the Full Truth. (**Eph. 3:16-19; 4:1-3**, etc.)

Gifts (of the Spirit) do not yield fruit whose seed is in itself, trees (people, the Spirit of God in people) yield fruit whose seed is in itself and after his kind! (**Gen. 1:12**) I cannot sow gifts and reap fruits, but I can sow my fruit and it shall yield seed after his kind. When I sow love I shall reap love and not hatred; when I sow faith I shall reap faith and not darkness; when I sow meekness I shall reap meekness and not pride. When I sow to the flesh (lusts, weights) I will of the flesh reap corruption, and when I sow to the Spirit I shall of the Spirit reap Life everlasting. (**Gal. 6:7,8**) Truth spoken (sown) in love yields seed after his own kind in the life where it was sown (heart of believer). No other seed from any other spirit will ever produce the same fruit.

How can we “lay aside” our weights which “so easily beset us” (**Heb. 12:1**) and lead us into sins and make us spiritually barren, unfruitful and unsuccessful in spiritually educating, building up and maturing believers including ourselves? There is only one answer for it and if you have read previous parts of this book with sufficient attention, you should know the answer: We may lay them all aside only on our cross! Not only that, but on our cross we also grow our fruit of TRUE LOVE because the Cross is the true “ground” for this most rare, but most excellent fruit.

To conclude this matter of weights-lusts and their enticing or luring us into sins and stopping us on our way to our perfection and to our ministry of perfection to others, we should now turn our attention to another Word of God which says:

“Blessed is the man that endures temptation: for when he is tried, he shall receive the crown of life which the Lord had promised to them that love Him.” (Jam. 1:12)

There are two spiritual facts to be considered with the above Word of God:

1... In order that we would endure temptation and be tried and receive the Crown of Life, we all have to be tempted! Hence, Apostle James also writes:

“My brethren, count it ALL JOY when you fall into divers temptations; knowing this, that the trying of your faith works out patience. But let patience complete her work, that you may be perfect and entire, wanting nothing.” (Jam. 1:2-4)

Thus far I have not met a believer who would have really rejoiced when he was tempted. Have you? Why? Because we naturally do not see that behind every temptation, there waits for us a blessing and the Crown of Life. When we endure the temptation – overcome our “self” – then we should see the fruit of it, perceive our blessing and also an increase of His Life in us. We may, perhaps, say that temptation is like unto an opportunity which we may not see coming, but we may see it clearly when we missed it.

2... But when we are tempted and then tried, it points to OUR CROSS as this process always produces sufferings in our soul. It points to our crucifixion process which we have already talked about earlier and explained what it really is. Talking about our weights, we may now enlarge the picture of our crucifixion by declaring that it is also LAYING OUR WEIGHTS ASIDE AND KEEPING THEM ASIDE. How?

Whenever we face anything that may start “boiling our blood” or “steaming our head” or may shock us or stop us in our way, challenge our beliefs even our deep convictions,

contradict our traditions or it may seem dangerous to our future plans or intentions, pose threat to our ideals, hurt our emotions or senses or otherwise bring us to an unexpected halt... which means... whenever some of our lusts are challenged or aroused or threatened, we must **PAUSE!** (see Addendum D, page D2 of “Truth about Salvation^[9]”).

IF WE CANNOT PAUSE AND GIVE THE SPIRIT OF GOD A CHANCE TO SHOW US IN THAT UNIQUE PRECARIOUS MOMENT THE TRUTH OF THE MATTER, WHICH WE ALWAYS ASSUME WE KNOW, BUT MAY NOT KNOW AT ALL, WE CANNOT TRULY BECOME OVERCOMERS AND OUR SOUL WILL NEVER CHANGE! OUR WEIGHTS -LUSTS SHALL REMAIN IN US UNTIL WE DIE.

Any particular lust in our being, whether physical or intellectual or emotional one, will not only remain in us, but will entice us and bring us to sin. Such sin does not have to be a lie or murder or adultery or such, it may be our foolishness or stubbornness due to our pride whereby we reject the Truth of God in our fleshly self-confidence where we “know it all” and are absolutely sure and nobody has anything to tell us. In all these cases, we shall assuredly commit the sin of unrighteous judgment due to foolish thoughts, if we fail to PAUSE and give the Spirit a chance.

Since you may not have our above quoted publication^[9], the Lord desires that a brief part from its Addendum D be reproduced here. Pausing will give the Spirit a chance to show you His Truth and Light on the matter and enable you to also admit in your own soul and conscience the following:

a) Not everything you do is perfect and acceptable in the eyes of God, many changes may be necessary. If the Lord sends them through any one – don’t reject or resist them,

b) Not everything you hear from others is true or righteous or wise especially if it is against the written Word of God or His Spirit; the Lord warns us saying **“Take heed what you hear...”** (Mk. 4:24). Always judge and reject what His Word shows as untrue; every time you incline your ear

to lies and accept them consciously or unconsciously, you will become a liar yourself and come under the power of the devil not even knowing that you became deceived. So, do take heed what you hear and what your heart and mind accept; all vital issues of life are in your heart (**Pr. 4:23**),

c) Not everything you believe is true and right. Many corrections or changes in your beliefs may be necessary. When the Lord gives you the light for a change, do not reject it just because it may be coming the way you do not expect, or because it “hurts” your flesh,

d) Not everything you desire in your heart or mind is right and profitable (**1Cor. 10:23**); many things prove hurtful, even suicidal at their end; this includes trying to serve the Lord your way by offering Him a “strange fire” (**Lev. 10:1,2**). Ponder your desires before the Lord and before you decide to follow them because Our God is a consuming fire! (**Deut. 4:24, Heb. 12:29**),

e) Not every road you walk is right and will lead you where you desire to end up. Instead of life, joy, peace, happiness and success, you may (later) meet grief, turmoil, failure, misery and death (**Pr. 14:12; 16:25**). When the Lord desires to change your way and redirect your steps, do not resist Him with your stubbornness (**Pr. 16:9**),

f) Not every believer or friend whom you know is truthful, honest, trustworthy, sincere and well meaning, though outwardly he/she may appear so! There are many wolves in sheep’s clothing and if you cannot recognize them, they may get you. Test them on the basis of the faith and light that the Lord already granted you,

g) Not everything you think is really true, correct or wise! Thoughts of an unrenewed mind are the true cause of all misery, troubles, problems, divisions and death! If you are unwilling to overcome these thoughts, you will never get out of this evil merry-go-round-of-thinking. You are in danger of always remaining THAT what you think (**Pr. 23:7**) – an incarnation of untrue, incorrect, unrighteous and unwise thoughts – a fountain of death.

u) REPENTANCE IS NOT DELIVERANCE. Repentance is our remorse, our willingness and decision to turn from our way and follow the light the Lord shows us. The goodness of God leads us to repentance (**Rom. 2:4b**) and it is the beginning of our deliverance, not the deliverance itself. How are we then delivered?

After our repentance, the Lord allows the same powers in our character to do their foolish or sinful “deeds” through us again (and again... and again... and again...). But when we truly turned from our foolish and sinful way and thus decided to follow the Lord, we received from Him the power to overcome and subdue these powers. (**Lk. 10:19, 20**) In this Word, the Lord includes the power and authority to cast out devils and deliver people from evil spirits that are external to man’s character (which is exorcism).

But the principle in this Word also applies to the transformation of our character in becoming a new creature. We are now to exercise this power from the Lord and learn to “walk in our deliverance”. Then we are “delivered” from their power and are free, and that, either completely or partially. With a partial deliverance, we will have to go through a multi-stage deliverance which is usually necessary when we deal with great forces (powerful habits) which are in our blood since our birthday or we may have inherited them from the four generations before us. (**Ex. 20:5; 34:7// Num. 14:18// Deut. 5:9// 2Ki. 11:30**) Such a process also requires multiple repentances. Whenever we keep repeating these same “deeds” of the forces of darkness and evil in our life, it simply means that our deliverance has not yet been completed.

During this process we feel bad, under heavy pressures and nigh crying, but this is a very good sign. Our deliverance and glorious freedom is “around the corner”. All our bad even painful feelings and pressures will disappear and we will emerge into the joy of the Lord, if we do not give up the Light from the Lord. That Light from Him is, at the same time, destroying our self-deception; the darkness in which we had lived and did not see ourselves.

v) THE WOMAN (Eve) ate the fruit of the forbidden tree of the knowledge of good and evil because she was deceived. And when she handed it to Adam, he ate it also because he loved Eve more than he loved God and not because he was deceived. (1Tim. 2:14) Now after eating it, he died and was separated from God. That changed the history and destiny of mankind.

When the Father handed the fruit of the Woman (Israel-Church) to His Son, He also ate it because He loved Her and not because He was deceived. But He did not love Her more than He loved His Father! And after eating it, He also died and was separated from God. That also had changed the history and destiny of mankind, and drastically. This is how the “victory” of Satan in the Garden of Eden was completely and totally reversed.

There is one more important fact that we should SEE and understand in our mind and heart and spirit concerning the knowledge of good and evil and the fall of mankind. Adam and Eve chose the WRONG TREE to eat from and after 2,000 years we, in the Church, keep choosing the SAME WRONG TREE! We stuff ourselves with a lot of KNOWLEDGE OF GOOD AND EVIL which will never give us LIFE! Why not?

Because in addition to the knowledge of good and evil, this tree also REPRESENTS A SEPARATION FROM GOD! It enables us to become INDEPENDENT FROM GOD, to live our own life and act in our own will. We now have our eyes “opened” (to evil) and we are like gods knowing what God knows – good and evil (Gen. 3:5) and we do not need God to live our life. In this case, we do not and cannot eat from the TREE OF LIFE because Our Father will not permit us to eat from both trees at the same time! (Gen. 3:22-24) Why? Because we cannot be unified with God acquiring His Life and, at the same time, be separated from Him enriching and educating our own self life. Furthermore, LIFE comes from Christ through our cross, not through our knowledge! We must first DIE to our (intellectual) knowledge of good and evil, be separated from it and stop living our independ-

ence from God – then we may eat from the Tree of Life. Let us also see and understand that...

THE KNOWLEDGE FROM THIS TREE IS NOT THE SPIRITUAL KNOWLEDGE OF CHRIST JESUS AS PETER ADMONISHES US TO **“GROW IN GRACE AND IN THE KNOWLEDGE OF OUR LORD”** (2Pet. 3:18), BUT IT IS A MENTAL KNOWLEDGE OF GOOD AND EVIL. IT IS NOT THE SAME KIND OF KNOWLEDGE AT ALL!

Furthermore, the mental knowledge of good and evil puffs us up (1Cor. 8:1) and makes our natural and sinful life more prideful. The spiritual knowledge of Our Lord gives us His Life. Let us further see and understand that...

WE CANNOT MIX THE UNCREATED, ETERNAL AND SINLESS LIFE OF GOD WITH THE CREATED, MORTAL AND SINFUL LIFE OF MAN AND TRY TO LIVE BOTH, AT THE SAME TIME, DEPENDING ON OUR LIFE CIRCUMSTANCES.

That is why the Church in these days is quite DEAD – separated from the Life of God! She lives Her own life and not the Life of God. There is a lot of knowledge about His Life, but very little manifestation of His Life. Oh, there may be a lot of fervent preaching, sweating, screaming, jumping, laughing, joking, singing, waving of hands, praising, a lot of interviews and conferences, seminars and other activities showing life... but this is NOT the Life of Christ. It is the life of our emotional and intellectual soul, which has very little to say about the narrow way, about overcoming or about our transition from the natural to the spiritual, which is our transformation process into the Image of Christ Jesus, the Son of God... very little, indeed.

The Lord says: *“Who has believed our report? And to whom is the arm of the LORD revealed?”* (Is. 53:1) Can we look into His eyes of flame (Rev. 1:14) and give Him an honest and truthful answer? Can we really do it in truth? That decisive moment in our life when He, the Living Son of God, will look into our eyes is “just around the corner”.

CHAPTER 6

WHERE ART THOU?

“...and Adam and his wife hid themselves from the Presence of the Lord God amongst the trees of the garden. And the Lord God called unto Adam, and said unto him, WHERE ART THOU?” (Gen. 3:8b,9)

Ever since that time, the Lord God has been seeking man and calling upon him... and ever since that time sinful man has been hiding from God being ashamed of himself. Though Apostle Paul encourages us saying ***“Let us therefore come boldly unto the throne of grace that we may obtain mercy, and find grace to help in time of need”*** (Heb. 4:16)...

...yet, the natural soul has never been coming to the Lord for help. He prefers to “hide among the trees of his garden” (people of his likeness) not to appear “naked” to the Lord. The natural soul is naked as it can never have the robe of righteousness, “the white raiment” or the “wedding garment”. (Rev. 3:17,18; 19:7,8// Mt. 22:11-13)

Now, Adam had barely committed his disobedience toward God and had no chance to commit any other sins, yet he right away started to show Satan’s nature. When God asked Adam whether he had eaten of the tree whereof God commanded him not to eat of it, he did not say “Yes, Lord” (Mt. 5:37), but he immediately started to defend himself and blame his wife saying:

“THE WOMAN that Thou gave to be with me, SHE GAVE ME of the tree, and I did eat”. (Gen. 3:11,12) Poor innocent soul! Do you recognize the different spirit?

Why is it important for the Lord to “know” where we are? He knows very well where we are, but we ourselves may not be aware of WHERE WE ARE IN SPIRIT and the significance of it. The Lord tells us ***“Watch therefore, for you know not what hour your Lord does come.”*** (Mt. 24:42)

If all true believers were “wise virgins” and ready to be taken (**Mt. 25:6-13**) then what should we watch for? And since we don’t know the exact time of His Coming, then why are we to watch? Well, we are to watch WHERE WE ARE! So, why is it important where we are? IT WILL DETERMINE OUR DESTINY AND THE WAY TO IT.

We are, of course, speaking about a spiritual position, not about a physical place. We are now speaking about the state and preparedness and sufficiency of THE WORK AND FRUIT OF THE HOLY SPIRIT IN OUR SOUL. This also means the sufficiency of THE OIL IN OUR VESSEL. The Bridegroom is coming for those from among the true born-again believers that ARE READY in His assessment. (**Mt. 25:10**) The rest of believers will have to wait for the judgment and rapture of the Church at the last 7th trump. (**1Cor. 15:51,52**) We repeat that the OIL IS NOT the Spirit of God in our spirit, but it is HIS WORK & FRUIT in our SOUL, which is our VESSEL.

* * *

At this point the Lord desires us to see the Truth in His Word in **Rev. 3:10** as it is a source of misinterpretation and confusion among believers. Two points need light from Our Lord:

(1) His Bride has kept the Word of His patience. What is the Word of His patience? There are passages in the Scripture admonishing us to be patient, deal patiently, show patience; they also include our “patient waiting for Christ”. (**2Thes. 3:5**) But the greatest patience that the Lord has been showing and living and which we on earth are not aware of is the following.

When the Lord ascended to Heaven, would you guess who he found there? SATAN and his angels! Satan has been in Heaven and has had access to the Throne of God ever since **Job 1:6-12** and before. Not until the war in Heaven, which shall take place shortly before the Great Tribulation, he shall be cast out and all his angels with him. (**Rev. 12:7-9**) So, after he lost his war with Jesus Christ (at Calvary), he has been continuing his war with His believers!

How? He has been “*accusing them before our God day and night*” (**Rev. 12:10**) and he has had plenty of ammunition for each of us to do that job! Are we aware of this fact? I doubt. A much more important fact is that for 2,000 YEARS Jesus Christ has had to face this “Fool of the Ages”, patiently reply to his accusations, be our Advocate with Our Father and keep patiently interceding for us! (**Is. 53:12b// Rom. 8:34 // Heb. 7:25// 1Jn. 2:1**) Is it possible for us to imagine this kind of PATIENCE? For 2,000 years? NO!

Whose advocates are we on the earth? Do we resist the Devil or do we resist our brethren? Are we also interceding before the Throne of God for the souls that Satan is accusing day and night for the sins that he caused them to commit? If we do, we also keep the Word of His patience.

(2) He will keep His Bride from the hour of temptation, which is the Great Tribulation. This cannot be compared with **Jn. 17:15**, as some do, since there it is clearly said that “they should not be taken out of the world”, whereas in **Rev. 3:10** no such thing is indicated. The Word which is applicable and confirms this rapture of the Bride is in **Lk. 21:34-36**. Here we are admonished not to live as the peoples in Noah’s days lived, but watch and pray so that we would be accounted worthy to ESCAPE (the Tribulation) and STAND BEFORE THE SON OF MAN. Also, Philadelphia is the only church that already has the crown – access to the Marriage Supper of the Lamb (during Tribulation) and to the Kingdom of Heaven (after Tribulation; **Rev. 3:11**).

I am now constrained by the Spirit of the Lord to write about those comparatively few that are chosen to be taken from among those many that are called and will not be taken. (**Mt. 22:14**) Those few are known in the Scripture as: the (current) Bride of Christ, the (current) Overcomers, the wise virgins, the Dove–Maiden of Shulamite (**S.Sol. 6:9,13; 8:5**) and the Man-child (**Rev. 12:5**, see much more on pages 289-291⁽⁸⁾) These are the chosen ones for whom the Lord is coming NOW before the Tribulation, before the “hour of temptation” that is coming upon the whole world. (**Mt. 25:1-12; 24: 40-42// Rev. 3:10**, more later on)

My first question is twofold: Do you belong to the few or do you not? Are you chosen to go now or are you not? Can you truly answer these 2 questions with any assurance in your conscience? This selection was not made by Our Lord. He did not divide believers into a “first class” and an “economy class”. This selection is being made by believers themselves, by their own decisions! IT IS ENTIRELY UP TO YOU WHERE YOU WILL BE FOUND AND WHEN YOU WILL BE TAKEN! IT IS ENTIRELY UP TO YOU WHETHER YOU WILL BE IN THE PORT BEFORE THE BOAT LEAVES SO AS NOT TO LITERALLY “MISS THE BOAT”! Fortunately, there will be another “boat” leaving at the 7th trump of the Tribulation.

And if you are chosen and taken, that will not mean that you were “preferred to others”, rather, you were “ready” for the time, you were the “firstfruits” of the harvest. The firstfruits are always taken before the harvest, which harvest will take place at the last trump and is described in **Rev. 14:14-16**. This harvest is done by the Son of Man, which is the Lord and it is done just before the wrath of God is poured on the earth. (**Rev. Chpt. 15 and 16**)

To be “ready” also means that you have a word of your own true testimony of what the Lord had done not only FOR you, but more importantly IN YOU, IN YOUR SOUL, IN YOUR CHARACTER, IN YOUR VESSEL, AND THEN THROUGH YOU TO OTHERS. You will need this word of testimony and the Blood of Christ to overcome Satan himself when you are taken up (within the Man-child) just in time for the war in Heaven! (**Rev. 12:7,11**) True believers are not supposed to see their rapture as an escape from Satan and from all their problems, rather, to see it as an opportunity to meet Satan and overcome him himself! This is the true testimony and witness of the Life and Power of Christ dwelling in you.

My second question is like this: Even if we belong to the chosen ones, how do we know that we are ready? Can we answer this question also? There are many pastors and preachers, who put that same question to their congregations while they themselves might not know what that “readiness” truly means. When we say that it is important to

know where we are spiritually, then let us see this picture closer and better.

There are occasions in the Scripture that show us a spiritual principle when we speak about readiness for our rapture (see the excellent article “The Cross and the Higher Ground^[7]” by Austin T. Sparks). Its importance is so great for us especially now when the Lord’s Coming is so extremely close, that I asked the Lord to grant us again its true spiritual meaning in the form that He desires at this time.

When Our Lord was taken up to Heaven in the sight of His Disciples, He was taken from the top of Mount Olives. (**Acts 1:9-12**) When He was transfigured before Peter, James and John, it was on top of a high mountain. (**Mt. 17:1,2**) Isaac was to be offered on top of one of the mountains in the land of Moriah. (**Gen. 22:2**) We may similarly view Mount Zion which is the “chosen part of Jerusalem” and it is also on “top of Jerusalem”. When you enter Jerusalem from which ever side, you have to climb up to Mount Zion. High mountains always require from us certain effort, striving, climbing, something that never happens to us while we are sitting, relaxing, reading or amusing ourselves in valleys. The Lord is also reminding us that Our Father has quickened us together with Christ and has RAISED US (HIGH) UP together and made us sit together IN HEAVENLY PLACES in Christ Jesus. (**Eph. 2:4-6**) That is the highest spiritual place where we can get during our earthly life. These high heavenly places are in our spirit and should be also in our soul.

What do these above facts indicate to us? We must be found on a SPIRITUALLY HIGH MOUNTAIN and prepared for our translation in order to be “transfigured” and taken up. It means that we must have the SPIRIT OF THAT TRANSLATION AND LIVE IN IT – **THIS IS THE READINESS** which is necessary and to which the Lord has been leading those that have been chosen from among the multitudes of the called ones. The day for the rapture of the Church will correspond with the spiritual state to which She will have arrived. It is the time of Her being “ripe” (**Rev. 14:15**), not for Her translation

only, but also for Her Judgment where it will be decided by the Lord, who is worthy of what and who is going where (see also Addendum, item 10).

When we speak of a spiritual high mountain or high ground, we speak of the high mountain of faith, the high mountain of fellowship, the high mountain of obedience to every Word of God, the high mountain of spiritual vision, seeing and revelation. We have to climb a high mountain to start seeing what we could not possibly see when we were down in our valleys. We also speak of the high mountain of spiritual responsibility, authority and morality. Most importantly, we speak about the high mountain of LOVE.

Unfortunately, up till now the Church has been on a rather low level of these spiritual virtues and characteristics mentioned above. For example, how important it is for the Church (and every believer) to be on a “high mountain of love”? Well, first, the Lord has **“*somewhat against thee*”**. (Rev. 2:4a) And, second, the Lord says to His Church:

***“Remember therefore from whence you are fallen, and REPENT, and do the first works (in love); OR ELSE I will come unto you quickly and will REMOVE YOUR CANDLESTICK OUT OF HIS PLACE, EXCEPT YOU REPENT.*”** (Rev. 2:5)

The Church had fallen down from the “high ground of love” and seemingly has never repented of it and never climbed back up again to that “mountain of love”... except for the church of Philadelphia and the Overcomers from the seven churches. Let us also realize that WITHOUT LOVE THERE IS NO BRIDE! (Mt. 25:6)

To remove your “candlestick” out of his place means to REMOVE YOUR CHURCH FROM HIS PRESENCE... since He was present in the midst of the seven candlesticks! (Rev. 1:13,20) It also means to remove YOU since you are a part of your church. Is this not serious? And it is all because of the loss of LOVE! Nothing more. So, do you truly believe that the Lord “*walks in the midst of your congregation, your church, your fellowship, your group, your organization*” or in

the midst of your family when there is no true love? HE IS LOVE and He is attracted by the atmosphere of love and repulsed by any atmosphere void of love. He is not interested in our knowledge of the Bible or in our intellectual wisdom or in our biblical doctrines, how many we have right and how many we have wrong. He is repulsed when we are performing an intellectual autopsy of HIS HOLY WORD with our mental scalpel and write reports about its results and then teach others about it. He is primarily and most importantly interested in whether our heart has a true love or it has none!

He is also attracted by the atmosphere of faith, obedience to His Word, spiritual seeing and revelation, spiritual responsibility, authority, intelligence and morality provided that the all important love is never missing there. A believer may be highly talented and endowed with plenty of natural virtues including knowledge and wisdom and diligence and faithfulness and responsibility and various other useful abilities... and have no love in his heart!

We must register the simple truth of the Word of God that WITHOUT LOVE WE ARE NOTHING (1Cor. 13:1-3) though we may have all the knowledge and all the faith to move mountains and though we may be doing truly wonderful works for the Lord, and though we may be admired by millions of believers around the world! I have to repeat this statement again and again and again since it is vitally important in our Christian life and in the process of the Salvation of our soul and spirit. It is also vitally important, if we desire to minister Christ to others.

Furthermore, without love, which is the "first in the line" of the fruit of the Spirit (Gal. 5:22), we cannot grow any other fruit of the Spirit. Is this also serious? Well, without meekness, for example, the Lord cannot guide us in judgment and cannot teach us His way! (Ps. 25:9) This means that in our pride and lack of meekness, He cannot guide us into "all truth" though He sent to us His Spirit for that purpose. (Jn. 16:13// Jam. 4:6// 1Pet. 5:5) Is this also serious? You should be able to judge this matter.

We may conclude this topic by saying that without the fruit of the Spirit we can't possibly reach any higher ground and be thus prepared for His Coming and for our translation to the heavenly places where Our Father had already placed us. And we repeat that the fruit of the Spirit may be equated with the OIL in our vessels, which oil the foolish virgins did not have and that is why they missed the rapture of the Bride. (Mt. 25:8-12) And in the very next verse (13) the Lord again says: "**Watch therefore...**" which shows again that we should watch where we are and what we do.

Therefore, when the Lord asks "**Where art thou?**" it does not mean that He needs to know, rather, we need to know and SEE where we are and where we are supposed to be. Are we able to SEE and judge where we are? And if we think that we stand with our feet on a firm ground, should we not take heed on what ground we truly stand lest we should fall? (1Cor. 10:12) We should never cease praying the prayer of David, "**SHOW ME YOUR WAY (give me spiritual eyes), O LORD, teach me Your paths.**" (Ps. 25:4) Because we may have a name, reputation, great ministry, we may be doing a lot of works, a lot of good, yet, in the eyes of the Lord, we may be dead! (Rev. 3:1) And if we are dead, we would not see any of the above truths and facts and we would certainly not be ready for our translation to the Throne of God.

Since Our Lord knows everything about us what is to be known, we have to keep coming to Him and asking Him for HIS assessment of us: what we need, where we are failing and why, what we are to do and how. The Lord is more than willing to show us all these things, guide us, supply all the power, endurance, perseverance, wisdom and light-faith so that we would achieve and apprehend all that God has promised to us in His Word and be His Overcomers.

First, we must ask Him to "make us meek", teachable, pliable, flexible in our spirit and soul and thus suitable to be taught and guided by His Spirit. This also means that we ought to be open to what ever may be coming from the Lord

to our conscience and heart directly from Him or through His true servants that He had chosen and ordained to help us. Therefore, the Lord says:

Do not reject outrightly what you may not understand at first sight or what may be against your current beliefs and convictions.

Pause and admit in your soul that you may be at this time (so close to the END) required to see, understand, believe and do things that are “new” and hitherto unknown to you since, due to deception, you may have been blind to them; to see and understand a greater depth, height, width, breadth and spiritual meaning of already known facts and truths. After such pausing, you will be able to verify these “new” things and facts and truths with the Word of God and with your conscience before you reject anything hastily.

Be not afraid to believe what you do not fully understand. The Truth of God does not come to you by your reasoning, but by faith which is not produced in your mind. Your “new” knowledge and beliefs will later be sifted by the Spirit and all that is of man and his natural wisdom shall be discarded.

May the Lord help you do the above and show you all that you need at this time to see and understand in your life according to His Wisdom, Grace and Love for you and also according to His calling upon your life. He has always been ready to give us ALL things that we need, if we would only be ready to ask Him for them and receive them! (**Rom. 8:32**) Amen.

CHAPTER 7

THE TRAGEDY AND GLORY OF BELIEVERS

Monumental things are about to happen to this world and to the Church of Jesus Christ. Are we truly prepared for them in our spirit? This is a highly personal question because the world is most certainly not prepared for anything that is coming. When it comes to believers, too few are being prepared by the Spirit of Our Lord for His Coming before the Tribulation. The Lord had not decided to prepare just a few, but too many do not care, do not even believe that they need any preparations, that they need to watch and pray and be ready (**Mt. 24:42-44**), that they need to take heed in what spirit they live, on what faith they stand. (**1Cor. 10:12**) They should not assume that they are ready only because they are born-again, baptized believers and they only have to wait. This would be a great blunder in their lives.

In addition to the light and understanding which the Lord had very graciously granted and I tried to describe in the above Chapters, He also brought me to His Word given to Isaiah and it is this:

“Except the LORD of hosts had left unto us a VERY SMALL REMNANT, we should have been as Sodom and we should have been like unto Gomorrah.”
(Is. 1:9// Rom. 9:29)

This Word is first directed at Israel since it is written that ***“Isaiah ALSO cries concerning Israel”*** (**Rom. 9:27**). But it is ALSO directed at “His people in the Church”. The vision is that the Word in **Is. 1:9** is closely followed by passages in Chapters 2, 3 and 4 of Isaiah, which speak about the time of the Tribulation period and the beginning of the Millennial Kingdom of Heaven on earth. This is the time of the Church in its closing stage and we are living in it NOW. In **Is. 2:19-21** the Word touches the events after the opening

of the sixth seal. (Rev. 6:15-17) In Is. 2:4 and 4:1,2 the Word speaks about the beginning of the Millennial Kingdom of Heaven on earth.

And today a VERY SMALL REMNANT is similarly being left in today's lukewarm Church of Laodiceans to which the Lord says, "***I will spue you out of My mouth***"! (Rev. 3: 16b) There are only few that find the narrow way which leads to life (Mt. 7:14), there is only a little flock to which the Father will now give the Kingdom with pleasure (Lk. 12:32); there are sixty queens and eighty concubines and virgins without number, but there is only one dove, the choice one born from her Mother (S.Sol. 6:8,9), the Woman (Rev. 12:1-6), the Israel-Church made one. (Eph. 2:11-16) There are only FEW that are chosen from among the many that are called. (Mt. 20:16; 22:14) Because of our depraved human nature, only few seek truth and are willing to face the truth, to face reality, to face facts presented to them. The majority of believers prefer their comfortable religion with "sweet deceit".

What shall we say about this "few"? This very small Remnant is called to take a stand in the war against the Devil ON BEHALF of the Woman – Israel-Church! Because of this VERY SMALL REMNANT, the Father will not consume the rest of the Israel-Church existing today as He had consumed Sodom and Gomorrah, that is to say, with **FIRE**.

Yet, **FIRE** in some form will be present and used to try all the believers from Israel and from the Church, who did not obey the Lord, ignored His Word, refused to be changed from their natural, sinful nature to His Image! Why will God use **FIRE**? The Lord warns us saying:

"Yet once more I shake not the earth only, but also Heaven... (Heaven includes the Israel-Church) let us (therefore) have grace, whereby we may serve God ACCEPTABLY with REVERENCE and GODLY FEAR. Because GOD IS A CONSUMING FIRE." (Heb. 12:26,28b,29)

This Word also means that those, who do not serve God to HIS ACCEPTANCE and with true REVERENCE and in true GODLY FEAR, they will all have to face His **FIRE**.

WHAT SERMONS, DISCIPLINING, CHASTISING, REBUKES OR POLITE PERSUASIONS WILL NOT DO, THE **FIRE** WILL! AND THAT EITHER IN THIS EARTHLY LIFE OR THEREAFTER! **FIRE** WILL MOVE LAZY BELIEVERS TO START SEEKING TRUTH VERY QUICKLY, ALSO TO MAKE RIGHT AND VERY TIMELY DECISIONS. **FIRE** WILL BRING SUCH BELIEVERS TO A SURPRISINGLY SPEEDY REPENTANCE AND WILL CLEANSE THEM FROM ALL FILTHINESS OF FLESH AND SPIRIT WITHOUT THEIR ENDLESS PROCRASTINATION AND RESISTANCE. DO YOU SEE IT? DO YOU BELIEVE IT?

THAT'S WHY OUR GOD BEING **LOVE** IS ALSO A CONSUMING **FIRE**. HE KNOWS WHAT HE MUST BE TO US AND WHEN.

* * *

The Lord constrains me at this point to declare His Word concerning the state of His Church and of Her ministers as She appears preparing Herself to bring forth the Man-child in the coming few years. (**Rev. 12:1,2,5**)

The Lord says that His Church does not need more teaching, more preaching, more sermons, more explanations or more knowledge of His Word. His Church needs to be shaken to its foundations to separate the grain from the chaff, to separate what the Lord built therein from what man built therein. And then the Church needs FIRE so that all the chaff and all that is manmade therein would be burnt. And that is precisely what is coming upon the Church and what the Lord has already started to do. No man will help this Church in any way. The latter rain had ended (**Jam. 5:7-9**) and the Lord will not strive with flesh (also in His Church) any longer (**Gen. 6:3**). The House of God is being shaken along with the world and it is ripe for His Judgment. (**Rev. 14:15**) HE THAT CANNOT PERCEIVE THE FALLEN CONDITION OF THE CHURCH IN THESE TIMES IS FALLEN HIMSELF!

Furthermore, the Lord shows His following Word:

“And in that day seven women shall take hold of one man, saying: We will eat our own bread, and wear our own apparel; only let us be called by your name, to take away our reproach.” (Is. 4:1)

The Lord says that ***in that day*** (the time between the 7th trumpet when the Church will be raptured, 1Cor. 15:52 // Rev. 11:15, and the coming of the Lord to establish the Kingdom of Heaven on earth, Rev. 19:11-16) the seven churches of the Book of Revelation (Chpts. 2,3) will take hold of one Man – Jesus Christ – saying that they are satisfied with what they have only let them be called by His Name to take away their reproach. Their reproach is in the fact that their spiritual womb had been barren and they produced no living fruit. (see also Lk. 1:24,25// Gen. 30:22,23) But the Lord gives His Name only to him that overcomes (Rev. 3:12) that is why He does not answer the request of those seven women-churches directly; rather, He continues saying that...

“In that day shall the Branch of the LORD be beautiful and glorious, and the fruit of the earth shall be excellent and comely FOR THEM that are ESCAPED of Israel.” (Is. 4:2; 11:1)

The Branch of the LORD is Jesus Christ, and the fruit of the earth ***in that day*** are all His Overcomers, His Bride, His Man-child. (Jam. 5:7-9) The Overcomers ***“escaped of Israel”*** and now also those ***“escaped of the Church”*** (of the Woman) being the Man-child, are caught up to the Throne of God. (Rev. 12:1,2,5,6; see also pp. 310-312^[8]) They were washed and purged from the filth and from the “blood of Jerusalem” (old soulish, carnal life of traditional religion) by the **SPIRIT OF JUDGMENT** and by the **SPIRIT OF BURNING** (Is. 4:4). This points to the **FIRE** that all Overcomers were going through during their earthly lives and the non-Overcomers will be exposed to after their earthly lives. (For the overcoming of believers after their physical death, see Scriptures and other details on pages 206–208^[8].)

His true Overcomer, His son/daughter and the Bride and Wife of His Son Jesus Christ believes, receives and then lives the Word of God which is POWERFUL and SHARPER than any twoedged sword and PIERCING into his joints and marrow (Heb. 4:12// Rev. 1:16) and which is like a **FIRE** and like a **HAMMER** that breaks his stony heart in pieces. (Jer. 23:29) Others are not receiving and not living it.

Those believers that built on the foundations of Jesus Christ wood, hay and stubble, will be saved, but tried and purged so as by **FIRE**. (**1Cor. 3:15**) Furthermore, the believers that did not overcome shall be hurt by the second death (**Rev. 2:11**) which is a lake of **FIRE** and brimstone. (**Rev. 20:14**) Also, they will not be allowed to eat of the Tree of Life, which represents Jesus Christ Personally, unless and until they overcome. (**Rev. 2:7**) Adam was cast out of the Garden of Eden and not permitted to eat from the same Tree of Life for the very same reason. (**Gen. 3:22-24**)

When any man consciously breaks any Commandment of God, opposes, resists or ignores His Will, he invites upon himself a curse from God. Such a man becomes cursed and unless there is a repentance and change and the curse is destroyed, God will not be with him any more. (**Jos. 7:12**) This also applied to Judas Iscariot, who betrayed the Lord consciously and hanged himself being accursed of God! (**Deut. 21:23// Gal. 3:13b**) The same applied to Ananias and Sapphira who consciously lied to the Holy Spirit and dropped dead at the feet of Peter the Apostle being also accursed. (**Acts 5:1-10**)

But when man does the same thing unconsciously, ignorantly, God remains with him to open his eyes and to guide him; yet, even in this case man has to carry certain consequences of an “indirect” curse. When Adam sinned, he did it in his naïvety not fathoming the unimaginable consequences of his sin. He was not accursed of God, but the ground was cursed for his sake. Adam suffered certain consequences of his sin and of the ensuing curse of the ground, which became his livelihood. He was cast out of the Garden of Eden and required to work in the sweat of his face and in sorrow to eat of it all the days of his life. (**Gen. 3:17-19**)

* * *

I am again compelled by the Spirit of the Lord to bring at this point to the foreground those ministers of the Lord, who may be preaching “another Gospel” than that preached

and recorded in the New Testament by Apostle Paul. They may preach it honestly, ignorantly, unconsciously, yet, if they do, they are under an “indirect” curse. (Gal. 1:8,9) How can that be? Their natural, uncrucified soul cannot receive the Word inspired by the Spirit. (1Cor. 2:14) Hence, they select the points and passages of the Word which suit their own doctrines, understanding and convictions leaving many spiritually important matters undeclared, unexplained, untaught. They rely on their own feelings, knowledge and wisdom and many times handle the Word of God with their intellect and emotions for their own goals and purposes!

In this way, it is quite possible even easy to preach the Gospel originally breathed by the Spirit with a different meaning, with the truth as understood by man and thus turn it into “another Gospel”. If then such ministers are shown the light from the Lord and they still ignore it, or if they purposely use the Word of God to suit their purposes, then their curse is established and the Lord will not be with them any longer.

That is the same reason why brother Watchman Nee wrote in his book “The Messenger of the Cross^[1]” (p. 135) this sentence: *“If instead of sensing our utter weakness and leaning entirely on the power of the Lord, we try to edify saints on the strength of our knowledge of the Bible and our excellent speech, in God’s eyes we will be SINNING WHILE PREACHING!”*

A very peculiar curse is found at the end of Paul’s first letter to the Church in Corinth. It is closely related to the MOST IMPORTANT ISSUE discussed in this book. The Word of God says:

“If ANY MAN LOVE NOT the Lord Jesus Christ, let him be ANATHEMA MARANATHA”, (1Cor. 16:22) which means: *“LET HIM BE CURSED AT THE LORD’S COMING”*.

Let us SEE and understand here two basic facts:

1) ANY MAN means ANY MAN and may include any believer, any evangelist, any preacher, any pastor, any

elder, any teacher, any “pew sitter”, any organist or musician or secretary or helper or any one in the entire Church of Jesus Christ, who does not TRULY love the Lord Jesus Christ! Paul writes to the Church, not to pagans though pagans are, of course, definitely included in ANY MAN.

From this we may SEE that the believers which do not TRULY love the Lord Jesus Christ are in a sense GROUPED TOGETHER WITH PAGANS... THOUGH THEY ARE NOT PAGANS. The reason is that their souls are principally the same – they are not governed and living by the Spirit of God! They are the same natural sinful souls which they were born with and no measurable spiritual change occurred in them. And that is the principal reason why such believers CANNOT TRULY love the Lord Jesus Christ; they first love themselves with their selfish love. And then they may love their spouses and family more than the Lord. (Mt. 10:37) They may think or believe or declare that they love the Lord, but it is their soulish persuasion not a spiritual fact and the Lord knows it (this was discussed before).

2) Why is such a man cursed? Is it really sin not to love the Lord Jesus Christ? Is it not enough to believe in the Lord, be born-again and baptized and blessed and not cursed? It may be enough at the time of our spiritual childhood and the basic development of our consciousness. But when our time comes to begin to mature, to fulfill the Commandments of Our God for the destruction of the sinful nature in our souls and to love Him with all our heart and all our mind and all our soul and all our strength, and we refuse, oppose, resist or ignore His Will-Desire, ignore these Commandments of God, we are inviting upon ourselves a curse from God as opposed to His blessing! We are thereby disabling ourselves from fulfilling the first and the second Great Commandments of God in **Mt. 22:38,39**. No natural, carnal soul can ever hope to fulfill these two Commandments or any other Commandments in the New Testament as they can only be fulfilled by our spiritual New Man. But when we oppose the Will of Our Father and refuse to do His Commandments, we are sowing to our flesh and we shall

reap corruption because the Word of God cannot be modified for our sake and convenience! (**Gal. 6:8a**). Also, we will not be allowed to enter into the Kingdom of Heaven, but will be called “workers of iniquity” and will have to depart from the Lord! (**Mt. 7:21-23// Lk. 13:25-30**)

Considering the above two facts, we should be able to SEE, that the circumstances and conditions leading to a curse are very real, serious and not to be taken lightly by any one, who calls himself/herself a born-again believer. The shortest and clearest fact is that EVERY NATURAL MAN IS SINFUL AND, THEREFORE, CURSED.

We may conclude before the Lord that His Word in **1Cor. 16:22** is closely tied with His Word in **1Cor. 13:1-8**, which is closely tied with **Eph. 4:22-24**, which is, again, closely tied with many other passages of the Word of God. These passages have been already mentioned and discussed in this book and they closely relate to the above aspect of **LOVE OR CURSE**. True love only comes from our “New Man”. Our old, natural man **CANNOT TRULY LOVE** the Lord Jesus Christ because he is selfish in his nature and thus loves himself intensely, and that, openly or more often than not, secretly. Therefore, any man living in his “old man” is **accursed** and is an abomination to God whether he is a pagan or a believer.

THIS IS THE TRAGEDY of too many believers, who may not even be aware that they may be living under a curse; that they may be committing iniquity and wickedness and that whatever their hand touches may be cursed and not blessed. EARTHLY PROSPERITY OF BELIEVERS OR THEIR MINISTRIES DOES NOT NECESSARILY MEAN AN ABSENCE OF A SPIRITUAL CURSE! THERE ARE MANY PAGANS WITH THEIR MANY INSTITUTIONS WHICH ARE RICH AND LIVE IN PROSPERITY AND ARE CURSED AND DAMNED ALREADY!

If believers are truly ignorant of this fact in their life, if they keep sinning and committing iniquity in their life, if they remain wicked in the eyes of God and are not aware of it, then the Lord will require their blood from those that were

called to watch over them, to care for them and warn them and who did not care for them and did not warn them. (Ez. 3:17-21) This principle from the Old Testament is very much applicable in the New Testament as well. The Lord had sovereignly chosen various “watchmen” over His people. They all are called to watch over them, care for them, teach them and feed them spiritually. If they fail their calling and responsibility before the Lord, the above Word of God to Ezekiel applies to them just the same.

Many times this TRAGEDY applies not only to the “ordinary” believers, but also to their “watchmen”, pastors, preachers, teachers, elders, who fail their calling in this area. They may be very diligent in studying the Bible, knowledgeable, zealous, honest, sincere and productive, producing “tons” of sermons, leaflets, pamphlets, books, tapes, DVDs, etc. Yet, they may have no spiritual discernment and thus are not discerning the true spiritual state of their own person as well as of their “sheep”. Many of them might be spiritually wicked, departing from their righteousness, committing iniquities; they may be proud, loving themselves and their own ways, doing their own will and desires and thus living their “Christian life” under a curse from God. This is a great TRAGEDY of too many believers, who keep refusing to take up their cross and be separated from sin and evil; they thus deprive themselves of immense blessings from God both now and also in their future.

Let us consider at this point a few more spiritual facts about the CROSS, FREE WILL and PREDESTINATION.

Satan does not hate the cross as such; he will give you many “crosses”, if you wish. He hates what is done on the true cross. This is the place where he loses his ground in us, his opportunities in us, his chances and his “last hopes”. Until Christ was crucified, Satan had great hopes to realize his old dreams and desires to usurp His Glory and Lordship. He lost them all in himself only after Christ was crucified and resurrected. When Christ destroyed death, Satan knew he lost his war and all his power. All power was

given to the resurrected Christ. (Mt. 28:18) It is the same with us. Satan keeps his hopes to get us back until we are crucified on our cross and resurrected. His hopes are not an unrealistic illusion; they are founded in the spiritual realities described in the Word of God. Satan knows the Scriptures much better than all the theologians of this world put together. He personally knows the Author of the Scriptures – God Himself. He knows the facts and principles with which man was created. He has no foreknowledge as God has, but he has his successes with vast multitudes of men, who are his followers by their own free will whether they are aware of all the ramifications of their decisions or not.

All the millions of pagans around the world which march to an eternal damnation and suffering in the lake of fire (Rev. 20:14,15) constitute a great “victory” for Satan. Had we not used our faith and confessed the Son of God with our mouth, we would have belonged to them without being fully aware of our eternal condemnation. He also managed to deceive, in one way or another, the whole Israel and the whole Church of Jesus Christ! NO BELIEVER IS ABLE TO SAY: “I AM NOT DECEIVED IN ANY WAY.” And if any believer says so and believes so, he is a FOOL knowing nothing about Satan and his ways and deceptions, and knowing precious little about God and His Ways and Truth.

Let us realize not only in our mind, but also in our heart and conscience the character and deviousness of DE-CEPTION, which in its very basic character is a purposeful leading from truth to error. Such an error may be either insignificant causing little damage or colossal causing great tragedies. In our physical life we also do many errors and we have to bear their consequences whether they are minimal or very painful and costly; ultimately they may cost us our physical life. Spiritual errors are no exception. The ultimate price we may have to pay for our errors is our very eternal life! Only the Lord knows how many painful or costly consequences we have to bear due to our manifold spiritual errors which are chiefly due to our pride, selfishness, stubbornness, foolishness and darkness.

MAN HAS **NO WAY** TO DISCOVER AND DELIVER HIMSELF FROM ANY DECEPTION THAT HE IS DECEIVED WITH! IT TAKES GOD TO SHOW IT TO HIM (DIRECTLY OR THROUGH OTHERS) AND DELIVER HIM FROM IT. THE WHOLE **REDEMPTION AND SALVATION** OF MAN IS THE PROCESS OF DELIVERING MAN FROM THE LIES OF THE DEVIL TO THE TRUTH OF GOD.

The Fall of Adam and Eve started with a lie; hence, our Salvation must start (and continue) with Truth.

Never in the history of the Church were deceptions so subtle, deep, persistent and so abundant reaching even to all levels of leadership of the Church, as they are today. And never before had God such “problems” with believers as now seeing that their hearts are not truly sincere, honest, contrite or open to Him to receive, believe and be delivered. It is primarily the soulish, religious believers which are the victims of the deepest and most dangerous deceptions. **PRIDE ATTRACTS DECEPTIONS.** Believers are first deceived by their own religious life, zeal, interest and willingness to immerse themselves into religious activities and projects of every kind and shape “working for the Lord”. It appears that there is no way to show these believers their deceptions and bring them out of them in some rational, reasonable way of sharing with them the light that the Lord had given for them. They keep walking in their delusions being unaware of anything and refusing any corrections, any advices, anything that is coming straight from the Lord and from His Word. If this is not a true TRAGEDY IN THE CHURCH then I don’t know what is.

Many preachers keep preaching the same things round-and-round again which give people interesting teachings, logical comparisons and the courses of actions that they must take while they are unable to take them for reasons that are never explained to them. Believers never receive the spiritual reality which defines their ability or disability to pursue such courses given to them by such leaders. And many leaders even after years of their sincere efforts are unable or unwilling to stop, pause and see whether

any spiritual growth and maturing and any spiritual change in the character of their “sheep” has taken place. Let them take any believer who has been in their congregation for 10-20 years or more, give him the microphone and ask him to testify, to witness about his new spiritual knowledge of Christ; and they will see whether his spiritual intelligence is higher than when he was redeemed. (**Heb. 5:12**) If they cannot see any spiritual development in their “sheep” then they might be feeding them with spiritually “empty straw”. They may be involved in an “eternally barren” religious merry-go-round that leads nowhere! (**Heb. 6:1**) Are these harsh words? Is this a rude speech? It may appear to you so, but the knowledge therein is not rude. (**2Cor. 11:6**)

The ministries that may have started well and with the Spirit of God are not continuing well, rather, they are spiritually deteriorating, and fast! And the Spirit is not with that ministry any more. The reason? The ministers do not see that there are powerful and cunning forces of evil and darkness that can imitate the Holy Spirit! That their “job” is to deceive, derail and hamper by ANY available means ANY spiritual progress of ANY believer and minister, who may be trying to make it. And the Lord is allowing these forces to “do their job” in and among His true believers. Are you shocked to read this simple truth? Well, what is the reality?

The reality is that nobody watches. The watchmen—ministers are not watching, so, instead of becoming more meek and spiritual together with their “sheep”, growing in their spiritual discernment to see these powers, to learn how to wrestle with them in spirit, they are becoming more proud, carnal and more blind. The Devil managed to derail or even reverse their original direction, plan, goal, destiny, which may have started according to the Will of God, but is now ending according to the will of man, or that of the Devil through the man!

The Lord says that it is not just pagans, but some of His believers, including their leaders, that have not received the love of the Truth, that they might be saved in their SOUL though they may be born-again in their spirit. To such the Word says:

“;because they received not the LOVE of the TRUTH, that they (their soul) might be saved. And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie. That they all might be damned who BELIEVED NOT THE TRUTH BUT HAD PLEASURE IN UNRIGHTEOUSNESS.” (2Thes. 2:10b, 11,12// Ez. 33:18)

The above Word applies to the believers, who remain wicked and deceived by their like leaders, preachers, pastors, elders and by the LADY MINISTERS, who also ignore the Truth, teaching men, preaching to churches (1Cor. 14:34 // 1Tim. 2:11-15) and thus serving Satan and not the Lord!

These ministers have become masters in using all the right phraseology, all the correct and desirable words that entice people into believing that they are well able to achieve the promises and goals that these false ministers are showing them. They will always smile at you, look very happy and full of joy and the more they talk the more people agree, nod their heads and clap their hands. Yet, there is NEVER ONE WORD spoken by them as to what the True Salvation of a human soul really is according to the Word of God! Not one word!

Too many believers cannot endure the sound doctrine any more, but after their own lusts seek for themselves teachers and preachers that will satisfy their itching ears. **“And they shall turn away their ears from the Truth, and shall be turned unto fables.”** (2Tim. 4:3,4) And once we believe fables, nothing will help us except possibly **FIRE** from GOD!

Many Church leaders may not be conscious of the fact that they are not exempt from deceptions and that not everything that comes out of their mouth is “approved by the Lord”. They may not be aware that to “talk about the Spirit” is one thing, and it is a very easy activity; but to be actually “led by the Spirit” is an entirely different matter and a painful activity that requires the death of their flesh on their cross. (Gal. 5:24) The Spirit will never lead their flesh to any truth! The devil is quite able and skillful to lead their

flesh by imitating the Holy Spirit, as was already mentioned above. What does it truly mean? The fact that someone preaches from the Bible and tries to explain what God means by that passage does not make that individual His servant! God gives His servants to His Church when they are ready in His judgment after having passed through His testing and **FIRES** and after their flesh is (sufficiently) burned and crucified! Theological faculties or seminaries can never do this job; academic degrees mean nothing to the Lord as they are not qualifications for His true, spiritual servants. In fact, academic or religious degrees may be great obstacles since God is not choosing His servants according to these human standards. (1Cor. 1:27-29)

Anytime, anywhere the Lord may suddenly ask us a simple question: ***“The thought that you have, is it from My Spirit or is it from your mind?”*** Are we able to answer it? **NO!** What proof do we have that that thought came from His Spirit and not from our mind? Are we able to discern our mind from His Spirit? Are we REALLY? We should be able to do it especially when we believe that our mind has been already renewed by His Spirit. Should this simple question from the Lord not stop us in our way and at least make us ponder things which we might have never pondered in our entire Christian life? And when our mind became “religious”, that is, soaked with the letters of the Bible, then this discernment becomes impossible!

The Lord says that if you preach or write books just to keep your congregations coming back and the finances coming in, then you are the most miserable servant of God under the sun. This Word from the Lord applies to all of us, this is not my intellectual thought. How do I know this? I will tell you.

First, the Lord builds His Church on totally different principles and in a totally different manner than man tries to do it. Second, the Lord is able to show the spiritual fruit of His work and also the fruit of man’s work and the difference between the two. And third, what the Lord says always comes to pass as opposed to what man says.

The Bible in the hands of a soulish, carnal minister can be a dangerous thing, and we should not blame that minister, who may have no consciousness of it. But we have to point out this extremely important truth and blame Satan for his deceptions, deviousness, delusions, murderous plots and tactics. Many times we live our Christian life as if the powers of evil and darkness did not exist and had no effect on us or had no interest in us! Are we aware of this truth? If we are not, it may cost us our life.

Since Satan knows the Word of God, he is not very disturbed when we preach the Word, teach the Word, study the Word, discuss the Word, publish the Word... but he is in a panic when we start living the Word of God in our earthly life; when we start using the Word to DESTROY HIS DECEPTIONS and powers of evil and darkness and with it his last hopes. THE END OF HIS DECEPTIONS IS HIS END.

To prevent our living the Word of God, which is so tragic to his plans, SATAN SETS UP HIS OWN "CHURCHES", where he preaches wonderful things from the Bible and wonderful promises from God. He gives people an emotional pep-talk so that they are beside themselves believing that they can do or live what is being said or written! He gives them ecstatic experiences of the "Holy Spirit" where believers laugh uncontrollably, roll on the platforms, shake like sacs of potatoes and sincerely believe that the Holy Spirit has visited them! Is this incredible? It is truly incredible, yet true.

And if you cannot believe that Satan can set up his "church" then **YOU** are deceived already! The Lord Jesus said clearly with His own mouth that Satan had his synagogue; (**Rev. 2:9**). Now if Satan can have his synagogue in the Old Testament he can just as easily have his "church" in the New Testament. If people who say they are true Jews and are not make the synagogue of Satan, then people who say they are true believers and are not, make the church of Satan! Are you truly registering this truth in your conscience, mind and heart? ARE YOU? I do hope so! You should read this paragraph 10 times or more and register its

truth and impact on your life. But are you by any chance attending one of Satan's churches, where the Bible is preached and the "Holy Spirit" gives you wonderful experiences? And where Satan dwells among you? (**Rev. 2:13**) Are you attending one? How do you know that you are not? What proof do you have? If Satan and his devils can dwell in Heaven (**Rev. 12:7-9**) they can certainly dwell in the Church which is Heavenly! I am hereby only exposing the TRUTH of the Scripture from the MOUTH OF OUR LORD JESUS CHRIST. Do you have ears to hear HIS WORD?

IF YOU WERE NEVER BEFORE AWARE THAT SATAN AND HIS HORDES OF DEVILS AND DEMONS ARE STANDING IN THE WAY OF YOUR SALVATION EVEN MAKING YOU PARALYZED TO DO WHAT GOD IS WAITING FOR YOU TO DO (*WHAT IS YOUR PART OF SALVATION AND NOT HIS*) THEN THIS IS A HIGH TIME FOR YOU TO REALIZE IT AND EXAMINE YOUR RELIGIOUS WALK IN THE LIGHT OF THE SCRIPTURE.

IT IS A HIGH TIME FOR YOU TO STOP BELIEVING EVERY CREATURE THAT COMES TO YOU WITH A BIBLE AND A SMILE. EXAMINE THE LIFE AND THE FRUIT OF YOUR PREACHERS AND TEACHERS AND PASTORS AND ELDERS AND BRETHREN, WHO ALL INFLUENCE YOU AND WHO ALL HAVE THE POWER TO BRING YOU EITHER TO HEAVEN OR TO HELL! DO YOU BELIEVE THIS?

One very important aspect of our TRAGEDY as born-again and baptized believers is that WE QUITE FREQUENTLY CONFUSE THE FIRST ADAM WITH THE LAST ADAM in our Christian life and deeds! Be not offended at this statement, I include myself into it because the Lord had shown me this fact clearly as applicable to all believers. We are advised by Our Lord that we can distinguish the two by their fruit only. (**Mt. 7:17-20**) But a COMPOUNDED TRAGEDY of many believers is that they cannot distinguish their own spiritual fruit either! Hence, we have to learn this very important lesson from the Lord's Spirit and it may frequently be a painful lesson. The simplest rule is: In the LAST ADAM (CHRIST) THERE IS NOTHING FROM THE FIRST ADAM! And in the First Adam THERE IS NOTHING FROM THE LAST ADAM! But in the First Adam you may find all the "fruit" of Satan... from the most

horrible and disgusting one to the humanly appealing, religious and appearing “goodly”.

Before the Lord gives us His Truth and His own experiences from His mission on the earth, He desires to expose another deception from Satan. It might be even more shocking than the truth declared above. There are today many “mega-churches” where even tens of thousands of believers gather together “to worship”. The greater the church, the greater the success – this is a sincere belief of many believers. Mega-churches are considered as a great “success”, their leaders are admired around the world and few people would doubt that this is so. But the Lord says that these “churches” are like unto cancerous or leprous cells on a living body or like a leaven that leavens the whole lump. (1Cor. 5:6,7)

The basic character of cancerous cells is that they grow uncontrollably against all the natural limits and self-controls of any living organism. Cancer is highly destructive in that all the natural processes within cancerous cells are in time suspended and death starts to work through them into the surrounding living cells. The spiritual life and its processes and developments in mega-churches are similarly suspended and spiritual death brought in by the original carnal cells starts growing and spreading itself to thousands of others. Leprosy is the same thing in that it disintegrates the body and slowly breaks down all its living functions. Lepers could not be integrated into normal society. Do you have eyes to SEE and a heart to understand and believe this simple truth? If you have not, it may cost you your life since you may not see your own state whether your soul is spiritually living and healthy or it is cancerous or leprous and dying. I am not writing these things to scare people, but because the Lord desires to expose these deep deceptions of Satan and warn His people. Satan knows and understands what he is doing, people don't know; they are usually incredibly naïve. Bad news is sometimes good news, if it wakes us up and gives us the chance to see what is happening to us and to correct our course in time.

The Lord also desires that we ponder, SEE and understand the following. How could have Satan ever hoped to deceive and get JESUS to bow to him, worship him and be on his side? Do we know the answer to this unusual question? YES, we do! But before we can satisfactorily answer this question, we have to answer another simple, but profound one and it is the following: What is the difference between the Son of God and the Son of Man? We should know. Well, let us reduce the answer by stating the following. The Son of God is GOD the Son within the Trinity of God where He is also called THE WORD. (1Jn. 5:7// Jn. 1:1) As GOD He cannot be tempted by evil and He cannot sin! (Jam. 1:13)

On the other hand, the Son of Man is MAN the Son and as such He WAS tempted at all points as we are. (Heb. 4:15) He could have disobeyed His Father, He could have defended Himself, He could have lived and made decisions according to His Own Will and not always according to His Father's Will. **JESUS THE MAN COULD HAVE SINNED, IF HE WANTED!**... because He was made like unto man with His free will, but without man's sinful nature in Himself. So, HE WAS MADE LIKE UNTO THE FIRST ADAM, who also had his free will, was sinless, without sinful nature and was also the son of God! (Lk. 3:38) In THIS SENSE, the First Adam before his fall and the Last Adam were the same! But when the First Adam was tempted, he sinned, whereas when Jesus, the Last Adam, was tempted He remained without sin. Jesus declared to His Disciples: ***"be of good cheer; I have overcome the world."*** (Jn. 16:33b) This also proves that He had to OVERCOME the same things that we are facing and must OVERCOME.

Now we can answer the original question as follows. Lucifer knew the Son of God personally and, even as Satan, he retained this knowledge in himself. But now, Satan meets Jesus, the Son of Man, and he views Him exactly as he viewed the First Adam – as the same prey! But Satan never knew what was LOVE, compassion, grace, selflessness, self-sacrifice, meekness, spontaneous and unforced obedience, which the First Adam did not possess either!

Hence, Satan only counted with the great power of his deception, deviousness and of his temptations seeing himself as superior to Jesus. That's why he used the same weapons against this "Other Adam", which he used so effectively and successfully against the First Adam.

Satan knew, Who was born in Bethlehem and what His mission was; and he also knew that he had no other weapons to use except what he used against Adam and Eve. But since the New Testament was not yet known, Satan had no foreknowledge of what Jesus would do and how He would resist his weapons. Also, he had no true understanding of the prophecies about the Messiah from the Old Testament. So, Jesus, this Son of Man, was for Satan the same prey – **FALLIBLE** – made under the law! (**Gal. 4:4**) AND **THAT WAS TRUE IN PRINCIPLE!** AND **THAT WAS SATAN'S HOPE** which he retained until the Cross and the Resurrection of Christ. And **THAT IS EXACTLY THE SAME HOPE THAT SATAN HAS FOR ALL BELIEVERS UNTIL THEY obey the Will of their Father and DIE ON THEIR CROSS** to their natural soul which is Satan's only ground of operations and victories; and until they **ARE RESURRECTED** and receive the New Life which is sinless! Do we SEE this crucial spiritual fact? Do we REALLY?

We do not seem to see, realize and believe that God will always accept the decisions of our will, desire or lust. He only warns us of their consequences. If we therefore desire to live our way and ignore His Word, God will accept that. If His believers desire to remain the way they are and together with their leaders ignore His warnings, God will accept that also. If people desire to remain blind, in their deceptions and believe lies, He will not argue with them nor will He persuade them. Jesus never argued or persuaded any man during His ministry on earth. He declared the Truth and left it to men to receive it or reject it. Don't we see that? Even concerning this MOST IMPORTANT ISSUE and our cross, the Lord said clearly:

"IF any man will come after Me..." (Mt. 16:24) thereby leaving the choice to man.

Let us now SEE clearly the true nature and purpose of Satan's weapons toward the Son of Man as it will unmask and uncover his tactics toward us, as well. Let us see and understand that there are obvious sins, vividly clear, noticeable, even logical sins as the transgressions of the law. (1Jn. 3:4) And then there are sins which are equally deadly, yet, unrecognizable and not obvious as sins, which might not be even defined as sins. Let us also see that Satan almost always tempted Jesus (directly or indirectly through men) with these non-obvious, often unrecognizable, hidden sins. Satan's goal was not to cause Jesus to steal, murder, lie, commit adultery or idolatry and the like, but to do something – ANYTHING – even any little thing OF HIMSELF, without enquiring of His Father!

The Father sent Jesus to do the Father's Will, (Heb. 10:7) to do the Father's faith and pleasure. (Jn. 8:28,29) Had Jesus done ANYTHING outside of this Father's Will, faith or pleasure – HE WOULD HAVE SINNED against His Father. (Rom. 14:23b) His destiny would have been the GREATEST TRAGEDY in this Universe! And OUR SALVATION WOULD HAVE NEVER BEEN ACCOMPLISHED! Can we fathom that? **NO!**

So we may not steal, murder, lie, commit adultery or idolatry, and the like, but we might sin daily, maybe even hourly by simply living our own life by our own will and always doing what "seems good, profitable, needful or wise" in our own eyes and understanding NOT ENQUIRING OF THE LORD ANYTHING! Yet, if Christ lives in us, then the life we now live in the body we OUGHT TO LIVE BY THE FAITH OF THE SON OF GOD and not by the beliefs of our natural self. (Gal. 2:20b) True? How do we fare in this area of the Word of God? MISERABLY. Fortunately, the Lord knows our frailties and weaknesses and inabilities despite our best intentions and that is why His Grace is sufficient for us (2Cor. 12:9) in all our "good intentions".

But that is where Satan wanted to get Jesus and that is why THE SON COULD DO NOTHING OF HIMSELF! (Jn. 5:19; 8:28) I hope we see that. Go through the Gospels and find the places where Satan prepared his traps for Jesus

and you should see what you might have never seen before. We, born-again baptized believers, are falling into the same traps daily, irrespective of persons. We have no clue what Grace and Forgiveness we need from God every day.

Now, the above spiritual facts do not affect or diminish God's Power, Omnipotence, His Great Love, Grace, Mercy and Forgiveness. His Will is not affected or changed by these spiritual facts. But they do prove that it has always been the Will of God to allow people to exercise their free will and choose their own destiny, their own master and the object of their love and obedience, to choose evil or good, life or death, blessing or cursing. (**Deut. 30:19**) God has never changed this Principle of the free will of man even after the man believed. God will never take from us our free will and the responsibility for our own decisions whether we are pagans or born-again, baptized believers. **THIS IS THE FACT** on which Satan also stands and operates and has his hopes and makes all his efforts to plot his destructive tactics. Are we aware of this "little" danger in our earthly lives? **NO!** IF WE, therefore, act and live as if we were already with "one foot in Heaven" just because we believed in the Saviour and study and preach the Bible, we may yet be the most naïve and deceived creatures in this Universe. We even ignore warnings from Our God as if they could not apply to us! (**1Pet. 5:8,9**)

ANY DOCTRINE, NOTION OR EVEN A HINT THAT ANY PAGAN, WHO BELIEVES IN THE SAVIOUR "HAS ALREADY MADE IT TO HEAVEN" AND DOES NOT HAVE TO OVERCOME ANYTHING IS STRAIGHT FROM HELL. DO WE BELIEVE THIS FACT? WE BETTER!

Unfortunately, this deep deception from hell has been preached and taught and believed widely, especially in the Protestant denominations. Those that know something from the history of the Church, the beginning of Enlightenment and the "birth" of Protestantism should SEE immediately and clearly the following fact. When Satan lost his deception of the "*Salvation by works and the goodness of man*" (Catholic teaching), he started to bring into the "new" Protestant

church a modified teaching: “*Salvation by faith alone with no works needed*”. This is nothing but making a sharp turn, crossing the “middle golden road of truth” and going right to the other extreme! If Satan cannot keep you from reading or studying the Bible, he will then push you to read and study it day and night until you drop dead from exhaustion... one extreme or the other... and that applies to all our life activities. So his plot with the “Salvation of man” is transparent, yet, owing to the naivety, foolishness and depravity of man, Satan has had enormous successes with both these extreme alternative deceptions!

Since our “works of faith” may often be strenuous, time consuming, demanding even painful, their success becomes the question of our diligence, attention, perseverance and quickness as opposed to laziness, lack of interest or attention and slowness. I am persuaded that no lazy, selfish or slow person will ever rule in the coming Kingdom. The Lord is even chiding such believers saying to them:

“O FOOLS, and SLOW of heart to believe...” (Lk. 24:25a)

This also means that if it takes us “half-an-eternity” to believe simple and clear truths about ourselves and begin to work out the necessary change, then in the Lord’s eyes we are great fools and slow! The people condemned to the Lake of fire and brimstone will at some point in time also begin to see and believe – but it will be too late! They were too lazy and too slow to seek Truth and change to get Life.

One important fact about “PREDESTINATION” is as follows. I suspect that there may be very many believers who may have wrestled with this question and never understood this spiritual fact as it stands before God. The Lord says that He gave man the power of a free will and with it the ability to accept or neglect, oppose or ignore the Will of God, His desires and Commandments and to choose what the man wants. And God will never annul or disregard the will of man. But God is able to FOREKNOW WHAT MAN WILL DECIDE BY HIS FREE WILL IN THE FUTURE since time is not a factor for God, only for man.

Therefore, God may say to one: *“I have predestinated you to eternal damnation because I foresee you will keep choosing disobedience and death with your free will every time I show you the way to life eternal; and I foreknow that you will never respond to the Light of Salvation made available to you during your earthly life.”*

And to another God may say: *“I have predestinated you for Life Eternal for I foresee in your heart, mind and soul your free-will decision to be an Overcomer, to keep My Commandments, to deny your old life, to take up your cross which I prepared for you, to live the life of obedience to Me and to be thereby transformed to the Image of My Son.”* (see also **2Thes. 2:13-15**)

Hence, God never predestinates any man to anything irrespectively or independently of man’s own free-will decisions. God respects His Own Eternal Principles which He established for His Creation and predestinates us according to our own free will decisions, all of which He foreknows, and not by His Will-Desire alone.

* * *

Let us now devote our attention to the spiritual fact of the **GLORY OF THE BELIEVERS, WHO ARE THE GLORY OF GOD.**

Whatever God does or creates, all His works or creations contain His GLORY which may at times be at least partially visible to men and at other times it is completely hidden. Nevertheless, all His works or creations usually manifest at least some of His GLORY especially at their beginnings and most certainly at their completion. His GLORY is eternal and the LORD shall always rejoice in His works. (**Ps. 104:31**) When the Plan of man’s Salvation was born in the Heart of God, it already contained an unfathomable GLORY. Part of that GLORY was clearly manifested to men at the birth of the Saviour, then at His Baptism, then partially during His ministry doing miracles, walking on the water, raising the dead, feeding multitudes, healing the sick, then on the Mount of Transfiguration, etc.

But **THE GREATEST GLORY** that He brought to the Father was displayed **AT HIS CROSS** when He yielded His life to the Will of God in order to accomplish His Magnificent Plan of our Salvation. This GLORY was completely hidden to men, but it was very much visible to the Father and to all His Angels in Heaven which greatly rejoiced while men saw nothing. All men that followed Christ and trusted in Him found themselves in despair, hopelessness and fear. (**Lk. 24:21**) There was no GLORY to be observed in those 3 days while the Saviour was in hell.

Then came the GLORY of His Resurrection and Ascension to Heaven which was visible to His Disciples, who were able to witness those events. Then came the day of Pentecost with its GLORY, which was also visible to men. Then the suffering of the early Church which also brought GLORY to God that, again, men could not see and understand at that time. The Rapture of the Bride of Christ and also of the rest of the Church later on will be other glorious events. The Marriage Supper of the Lamb, the following Kingdom of God on earth and finally the descent of the New Jerusalem will be nothing short of the FULL GLORY OF GOD.

The Lord says that the above principles also apply to us. There is a part of the GLORY OF GOD when we are born in Spirit and it may be visible to some, but it may not be visible to many others. Then comes the day of our "Pentecost" when we receive gifts from Heaven, including "visible" gifts such as healing, working of miracles, tongues or interpretation of tongues, etc. (**1Cor. 12:8-10**) This part of the GLORY may be quite hidden to men including ourselves unless we start practicing these gifts in our own lives or ministering them to others.

But **THE GREATEST GLORY** that we can bring to God is when we are yielding our life to His Will **ON OUR CROSS!** Again, this GLORY may not be visible to any man, including ourselves! But it is very much visible and appreciated and cherished by Our Saviour and Lord and by Our Father which are in Heaven!

It is written rather plainly in the Word of God that ***“he (man) is the Image and GLORY OF GOD; but the woman is the GLORY of the man.”*** (1Cor. 11:7)

THE GLORY OF GOD cannot be described in human words. Yet, it can be seen and experienced in some limited way in the earthly life of people to whom the Lord desires to show it. Moses once asked God to show him His Glory, and He did... in a limited way. (**Ex. 33:18-23**)

THE GLORY OF THE CHURCH should also be impossible to describe in human words or even to imagine. We should ALL be in the UNITY OF FAITH, have the same spiritual knowledge of the SON OF GOD; be a PERFECT MAN having the Measure of the Stature of the FULLNESS OF CHRIST! (**Eph. 4:13**)

The Lord desires that we all would see and understand the truth concerning His Glory and the Glory of the Church and discern it also in our practical life. We may speak about it, preach about it, sing about it, try to imagine it, but we may not see it, understand it, cherish it, or preserve it in our heart. In one church they greeted one another by shaking hands and saying: “Glory”, then the others replied: “Glory”. It was rather childish as they had no clue what they were doing or why; it was an empty word.

Let us **firstly** SEE and understand that THE GLORY OF GOD IS HIS UNAPPROACHABLE RADIANT LIGHT, HIS ABSOLUTE HOLINESS AND HIS FULL SATISFACTION AND PLEASURE. (**Ex. 33:20-22// Mk. 1:11// Rev. 4:8,11, etc**)

The light, holiness, satisfaction and pleasure are also the Glory of the Church as the Bride and Wife of the Son of God. (**Rev. 21:9-11**) Therefore, when our life “glorifies God”, it also means that it brings true satisfaction and pleasure to God and also our respect, admiration and worship for His absolute Holiness, Righteousness and Goodness. His Glory also rests in His Name and in anything to which He put His Name, including His Temple. (**Num. 6:27// Deut. 12:5// 1Ki. 9:1-3// 2Thes. 1:12, etc.**)

We should now also see and understand that whatever does not bring true satisfaction and pleasure to Him, whatever brings shame to His Holiness, to His Honour or Name, robs Him of His Glory, shall be destroyed. This also applies to any believer, who is the Temple of God by virtue of his being born by His Spirit and to which Temple God attached His Name. It is clearly written in the Word of God that if any such believer...

“defile the Temple of God, him shall God destroy; for the Temple of God is holy, which Temple you are.”
(1Cor. 3:17, also Lev. 24:16)

This Word in **1Cor. 3:17** is NEVER PREACHED, taught and explained as it is inspired by His Spirit. Why? It is unacceptable to the natural believer, to his sense of justice, to his human doctrines or to his imagination of God, Who is Love, but Whose Holiness, Justice, Honour and Righteousness do not dwell in the conscience of that natural believer so he is not aware of them! Very few believers ever seek what this defilement truly means or how can we defile our Temple of God and thus bring shame to His Honour and Glory.

The vast majority of believers take the Word of God and His Judgments very lightly because the Glory of God is only a biblical expression for them, which they use or sing about, but do not see in their heart and spirit. They may thus not care whether they bring shame or Glory to God since they do not SEE what they are doing and bringing to God! For them, ignorance is bliss... until the day comes when they will see it.

Let us **secondly** SEE and understand that we may be bringing shame to God, to His Name and robbing Him of His Glory daily without being necessarily aware of it. Every time we ignore His Word or break His Word, we ignore His Will and Glory, His satisfaction and pleasure.

But it will take much more, much, much more for us all than to attend church services, read or preach the Word, hold seminars or conferences in order to achieve this

GLORY of the Church. Even the Overcomers are not perfect as yet and the Word of Our Lord in **Mt. 5:48** still remains our goal and, so far, we, in our humanity, see no way how to ever attain to it.

The simple truth remains that at the end of all events and after the Lord's Judgment of our person, of our Christian life and also of our ministry in the House of God, we will experience either OUR GLORY or OUR TRAGEDY.

May Our Gracious, Merciful, Wise, Loving and Powerful Saviour and Lord have Mercy on us all in the Day of His Judgment and Assessment of our souls as members of His Holy Body. May He also enable us to discern His Living Body righteously and thus treat It with love, grace and respect.

CHAPTER 8

AS THE DAYS OF NOAH WERE

Before we conclude this brief work on the MOST IMPORTANT ISSUE for believers, let us pause and realize that we can read books, articles, brochures even the Bible itself from morning till evening and not profit from it at all! Many writings may be very interesting and we may feel good after having read them; we may also feel bad and distressed. But our feelings when we read such writings do not matter just as our thoughts do not matter either. What matters is whether our soul (heart) IS SEEKING TRUTH OR NOT. Our soul may be seeking entertainment or “good reading” or self-satisfaction. This normally happens when the writer expresses our own understanding and convictions about the matter because it always “feels good”. But this is not seeking truth, seeking the Lord, seeking the Kingdom and its righteousness. (Mt. 6:33)

When our soul SEEKS TRUTH, then we have to register what we read including all the parts which may NOT satisfy the feelings or understanding of our mind or heart about the matter. Because when our soul SEEKS THE TRUTH INDEED, the Lord knows about it and He begins to open our spiritual eyes and our spiritual understanding. He desires more than we do that we would find the truth, see it, understand it and receive it. He knows well that our natural soul is unable to find, see, understand or receive any spiritual truth. The Lord has to open our understanding whether we read the Scripture or the writings of His true servants. (Lk. 24:45)

Therefore, ideally, we should ask the Lord to open our understanding before we read spiritual writings or when, during or after our reading, we see that what we read does not quite answer our understanding. But though He would start opening our eyes, we would have to persevere and repeat the reading once, twice or more times before we could begin to see its truth sufficiently clearly. The Lord can show us this fact from His Word. Two examples:

1) **Mk. 8:22-26** – When Jesus was asked to heal a blind man, He had first LED HIM OUT of the town of Bethsaida. Why? Because the people of the town were spiritually blind, regarded nothing of the miracles of the Lord and the Lord pronounced WOE to that place. (**Mt.11:21,22**) Then He spit on his eyes and put His hands upon him and then asked him what he saw. The man saw people as trees walking. Jesus repeated the procedure and then the man started to see clearly. The Lord desires that we would SEE in this passage of His Word the following fact. Before He gave the man his eyesight, He first led him OUT of the town of Bethsaida. And after He gave the blind man eyesight, He commanded him NOT TO GO BACK and NOT TO TELL ANY ONE IN THAT TOWN! Why? Because He will not give you eyesight in the midst of people who are blind, even to His miracles, and understand nothing. Therefore, if you are in the midst of a blind congregation, fellowship, group or other gathering, the Lord has to first take you out. If you are not willing to go out, you will never receive your spiritual sight! And when you do go out and receive your spiritual sight, you will not return back nor will you tell those people about it. That is precisely what had happened to me and will happen to many others whose heart is seeking Truth, who desire to SEE in spirit and understand in heart.

2) **Job 33:14** – God speaks to us once, even twice, yet we do not perceive what He says to us verbally through preachers or in His written Word or in the writings of His true servants. We must listen or read more than once or twice to be able to start registering the truth. So, read this book twice or three times and you will see the difference.

Our soul (mind, heart, will) must be sufficiently transformed so that we may start registering the truth, seeing it, understanding it, receiving it and finally living it. This spiritual transformation in our soul should begin after our water baptism. If this transformation does not take place during our earthly Christian life, our soul will be required to be transformed after our physical death, this time through FIRE and through far greater and longer sufferings and pains.

One basic fact which we must declare at this point is the following:

THE PHYSICAL DEATH OR RAPTURE OF BELIEVERS DOES NOT CHANGE THEIR SOUL, DOES NOT DELIVER THEIR SOUL FROM ITS SINFUL NATURE, DOES NOT PERFECT THEIR SOUL IN A “TWINKLING OF AN EYE” AS MAY BE IMAGINED BY MANY BELIEVERS. IT IS ONLY THEIR BODY WHICH WILL BE CHANGED FROM CORRUPTION TO INCORRUPTION, FROM MORTALITY TO IMMORTALITY. (1Cor. 15:51-53// Lk. 16:19-31)

If their soul could be delivered and perfected by their physical death or rapture, then too many passages of the Scripture would become absolutely meaningless (ex. Mt. 7:13,14,18-27; Mt. 8:12; Mt. 16:24,25; Mt. 22:2-14; Mt. 23:13-33; Mt. 25:1-14,30// Lk. 13:24-30// 1Cor. 16:22// 2Cor. 7:1// Eph. 4:22-24// Phil. 2:12; Phil. 3:14// Col. 3:5// 1Pet. 3:19,20, etc.) If our perfection should only wait for our physical death or rapture, then we would not have to do any Word from the above examples or be engaged in any working out of our Salvation, to put off our old man and put on our new man. We would not have to worry about any overcoming or walking on the narrow road or taking up our cross or denying ourselves. We could not be told by the Lord “*I know you not*” and we could not be thrown into outer darkness where there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth. All these above passages of the Word of God would become meaningless and absurd! It should not be difficult to see and understand that our “flesh-sinful nature” resides in our SOUL and not in our body. Hence, any future change in our body will not affect our soul. The rich man’s pride, lusts and selfishness remained with him in the Hades. (Lk. 16:19-31)

Yet, there is what may appear as an exception to the above where Apostle John writes: ***“but we know that, when He shall appear (at our rapture), we shall be like Him; for we shall see Him as He is.”*** (1Jn. 3:2b)

This Word does NOT mean that believers will become like Him because they shall see Him as He is! Oh no. The

Word means that those who are already the sons of God, (1Jn. 3:2a) that is to say, Overcomers that have already crucified their flesh and purified themselves (1Jn. 3:3) and who are of God because they do righteousness and love their brethren; (1Jn. 3:10) all these shall realize that they are like Him when they shall see Him. All those taken in the pre-Tribulation Coming of the Lord are already "like Him". (Mt. 24:40,41// Rev. 3:10; 12:5) Yet, when we shall be "like Him" does not mean that we shall be as perfect as Christ is. "Like Him" does not mean "identical to Him". Our full perfection may await us in New Jerusalem... 1,000 years after our rapture and reigning with Christ. There will also be saved nations walking in the light of the New Jerusalem, the Wife of Christ, and they shall not be perfect even at that time. They were hurt (also of the second death) and they need the leaves of the Tree of Life for their healing. (Rev. 2:11; 22:2) If you need healing, you are not perfect.

The MOST IMPORTANT ISSUE for any believer described in this book is a very personal matter between God and the believer. God FIRST looks at our SOUL – WHO WE ARE. ARE WE NATURAL SOULS OR SPIRITUAL SOULS? Are we worthy of Him and of the Kingdom of God or are we not? (1Thes. 2:12 // 2Thes. 1:5,11)

THEN He looks at our WORKS – WHAT WE HAVE DONE. WERE THEY DONE BY OUR NATURAL SOUL OR BY OUR SPIRITUAL SOUL? He will reward us according to our works. God will not give any good reward to our "old man", but He will assuredly reward him for his evil works. (Mt. 16:27// 2Tim. 4:14) Please, consider diligently this fact in your heart and conscience distinguishing God's priorities and Judgments of believers after their physical death or rapture.

Why is this fact so important especially at this end time? The Church has been engaged in all kinds of activities and works especially evangelism, teaching, preaching, discussing and publishing biblical theology and prophecies and doing a lot of social works. The Church is also trying to solve the problems of this world like poverty, HIV and other

diseases, “global warming”, terrorism, war and peace, political problems, economic problems, morality problems and many other problems of the world even trying to “improve the world and bring peace to it”. These are NOT the tasks that the Lord assigned to the Church and to Her leadership. The area of problems and responsibilities of the Church is NOT IN THE WORLD, but in the heavenlies, where the powers of darkness and evil dwell and from where they govern the affairs of the world AND of the fallen Church! (**Eph. 6:12**) So, THE FALLEN CHURCH HAS BEEN DOING THE WILL OF MEN AND NOT THE WILL OF OUR FATHER!

Let us see and realize in our mind and heart and conscience that there is nothing wrong with taking care of an orphan child or helping the poor, bringing food to the hungry, provide shelters or other needful things to them that do need them, to do good works of this nature. There are many Christians, who are engaged exactly in these types of good works. Yet, the Lord desires to show us here two important points concerning our good works:

1) Believers should first direct their help toward their brethren rather than toward pagans. (**Jam. 2:15// Gal. 6:10**) When they desire to help pagans, they should always enquire of the Lord. Why?

2) His Spirit does not lead us to such good works at every place, every time and with every man where we may see such needs! Just as He may forbid us to preach the Word of God in some areas or to some peoples (**Acts 16:6**), so He may likewise forbid us to render help in some areas or to some peoples. We need the necessary discernment not to commit blunders in our natural, humanistic soul. The Lord knows that the Church, in general, does not have this kind of discernment. Too often the monies of believers sent abroad were misused to acquire weapons or send people to destruction rather than help them during various catastrophes; or “Christian” help was sent to the places which God judged by sending there famine or natural disasters by His own hand! Do we see the blunders that we may often commit? (ex. **Ez. 14:13-22// Lk. 4:25-29**)

The Lord had given to the Church “*SOME APOSTLES, AND SOME PROPHETS, AND SOME EVANGELISTS, AND SOME PASTORS AND TEACHERS FOR (1) THE PERFECTING OF THE SAINTS, (2) FOR THE WORK OF THE MINISTRY, (3) FOR THE EDIFYING OF THE BODY OF CHRIST.” (Eph. 4:11,12).*

These servants of the Lord were not given to the Church to help solve the problems of global warming, world poverty, social problems, political problems, economic problems or other problems of this world. This is not to say that the Lord may never lead us to help some people in some way. But the Lord had given His servants to the Church to FIRST solve the spiritual problems of the Church and build Her up! And the Lord says that THE CHURCH HAS ABSOLUTELY FAILED THIS TASK TO PERFECT THE SAINTS WHICH THE LORD ADDED TO HIS CHURCH. As we are (1) perfected (our flesh crucified), so we may start (2) ministering and (3) edifying the Body of Christ in spirit, not mentally. But believers in their natural souls prefer to do social works and activities and evade working out their own Salvation with fear and trembling before God! Why? The working out of their own Salvation is much harder, frustrating and painful and testing than all the other works and religious activities put together. So we prefer to take from the treasures of the House of God and spend it on the heathen world which is the enemy of God instead of on the children of God!

Do we not understand that all the problems of this world are in their roots spiritual problems? And that all the problems within the Church of Jesus Christ are also spiritual problems? If we do understand it, then we should also understand that...

THERE ARE NO HUMAN SOLUTIONS FOR SPIRITUAL PROBLEMS.

Yet, how often are we ready to devise and apply our logical and humanistic solutions to solve problems around us and chart our own ways to achieve them and not enquire of the Lord? But the Lord will not accept the works of our

“flesh”, of our natural soul and their fruit. I believe we do not have to spend more time on this.

The Lord desires at this point that, from a very practical viewpoint, we would repeat the following spiritual facts.

Our knowledge means nothing, our wisdom means nothing, our doctrines mean nothing, whether we agree with some doctrines and disagree with others means nothing! Even the right doctrines are only good as direction pointers, “traffic signs”, but if we do not move in their direction, if we do not obey them, we do not need them... except, perhaps, for arguing and dividing His Church and thus making a mockery of the One Faith and One Lord. **(Eph. 4:5)** Many of our doctrines, much of our knowledge and wisdom are fashioned and influenced by our own character, mentality, imaginations, pride and our own interests, goals and hopes. All such doctrines, knowledge and wisdom have been lacking spiritual life, spiritual values and thus their usefulness for the Salvation of our soul.

Our HEART and MIND are two organs of our SOUL, yet, they may be quite opposite in character, nature and virtues. What the mind accepts, the heart may reject or vice-versa. What the heart understands, the mind may not understand at all, or vice-versa. What the heart can see, the mind can be blind to or vice-versa. They are like unto two “spouses” in one house or like unto two lobbyists in the corridors of power and of government which “corridors” are in our will. And our will decides on the basis of which of the two has a greater influence, louder voice, greater persuasion or better reasoning. But while our will is also selfish, while it is a self-will, it will always listen to the “spouse” in the house or the lobbyist which demands self-interests. Hence, all three organs of our soul must be “purged” from their selfishness and other flesh in order that they may be able to accept the Will and the Government of Our Lord.

We naturally care for our earthly state and life and “modify” the things of the Spirit to suit our earthly life, goals, hopes and self-satisfaction. We seldom give a thought to our future destiny and life promised to us by Our Lord and

to His conditions for reaching that life and living it. Even our imaginations must be very misty and 'fairy-tale' like lacking any reality. So, the Word of God sounds very true and real saying “...**Eye has not seen, nor ear heard, neither have entered into the heart of man, the things which God has prepared for THEM THAT LOVE HIM.**” (1Cor. 2:9)

This Word in principle applies to all true believers, but it ends there for the natural believers, who cannot love Him. For the spiritual believers the Word continues saying “**But God has revealed them (things He prepared for us) unto us by His Spirit: for the Spirit searches all things, yea, the deep things of God.**” (1Cor. 2:10)

We are now repeating the most important facts about man and his SPIRIT and SOUL which facts show us also our future life in God and the THINGS which He prepared for us and which we can know NOW as they are being revealed to us. Let us again realize the depth of the Word of God saying “**For what man knows the things of a man (including himself), save the SPIRIT OF MAN which is in him? Even so the THINGS OF GOD knows no man, but the Spirit of God.**” (1Cor. 2:11 in conjunction with verse 14)

Therefore, if the Spirit of God is not allowed by our consent to work in our SOUL and to dispose of our flesh, He cannot grant us any revelations concerning our future or show us “those things” that He prepared for us. While we remain natural believers, we cannot possibly SEE and comprehend Our Lord's prayer where He prayed to His Father saying “**That they all may be ONE; as You, Father, are in Me, and I in You, that they also may be ONE IN US:**” (Jn. 17:21) This also means that in the New Jerusalem...

WE SHALL NOT BE WITH GOD, WE SHALL BE IN GOD!

Can we fathom this truth? NO! I believe we shall start coming out of our deep spiritual unconsciousness and ignorance only in the Kingdom of Heaven where we shall finally be with Christ personally and will begin to experience Him

and the above truth. We will undoubtedly also experience how sweet and glorious is the mystery of oneness – unity – marriage – with Our Own Creator and Saviour and Lord. Only Overcomers are enabled to start to see it partially now, comprehend it, fathom it, enjoy it, glory in it and live it partially in their earthly lives! Natural believers are not able to do it because human nature can never be united with God's Nature; there can be no marriage, no unity, no oneness of these two enemies!

WE MUST CHOOSE BETWEEN GOD'S NATURE AND HUMAN NATURE AND THAT CONSCIOUSLY, TRUTHFULLY AND DEFINITELY so that our decision would be clear to Our Lord, to us, and to all around us. If we do not do it now, we will have to do it later, but under much different circumstances. Procrastination and passivity is a sure way to TRAGEDY. The Word of God indicates this clearly. (Lk. 13:24)

* * *

The Lord has never failed providing His Church with all the necessary Light and Guidance, with His Grace and Patience and Love and Chastisement and Rebuke and Discipline. He has also provided His timely warnings. Read the Prophets of the Old Testament and see how many times and how persistently the Lord warned Israel before their manifold catastrophes and tragedies. And see how many times (if any) the children of Israel listened to Him, that is to say, to His Prophets? Can you enumerate them? And the chief reason for not listening to them could be counted as UNBELIEF AND IDOLATRY!

Why do we believe that the Church is better than Israel? On what Scriptural basis should we believe that? Do you truly believe that the Church is free from unbelief or idolatry? The Protestants always pointed their finger at Catholics and their sanctuaries filled with statues and pictures and other paraphernalia. But the Lord has been pointing His finger also at the Protestants and at their idols which are not so much as hanging in their sanctuaries as they are

“hanging” in their own souls. They do not worship statues or the image of Baal (**2Ki. 10:19-28**), but THEY DO WORSHIP THEIR OWN IMAGES, THEIR MINISTRIES, WORKS FOR THE LORD, ACHIEVEMENTS AND OTHER IDOLS! There is no part of the Church which is free from idolatry as there is no believer truly free from pride! And it is always THE LEADERSHIP WHICH IS THE MOST PRIDEFUL PART OF THE CHURCH. Why? Well, the state of any organization, institution, congregation or other entity in this world always depends on its leadership! Satan knows it also; so, could you guess what he is aiming at? When he deceives leaders he deceives their organizations, institutions, the whole entities and everyone, who depends on them. Is this not the most clever and efficient way?

Is it not shocking that the MOST PRIDEFUL PERSONS IN THE ENTIRE HISTORY OF ISRAEL WERE THEIR RELIGIOUS LEADERS? THEY DID NOT RECOGNIZE THEIR OWN MESSIAH! THEIR PRIDE, REASONING AND JUDGMENTS KILLED THEIR MESSIAH! Their vast mental knowledge of Torah did not help them one bit, except to make them children of hell and to condemn them to hell! (**Mt. 23:15,33**) It was not an angry mob of pagans or Roman soldiers, who crucified Jesus. NO! THE RELIGIOUS LEADERS OF ISRAEL KILLED HIM. They also incited their people to cry “crucify Him”. Is this something we can easily explain away? Is it just a story from the Old Testament that does not have any spiritual meaning for us today? Can we register or fathom in our soul or conscience this terrible **SPIRITUAL TRAGEDY? NO!** Leaders should be the most humble and meek ones, they should be shepherds and not vipers, they should be trustworthy and not hypocrites, they should represent the Lord and not their religious organizations and they should know the Lord Himself and not just have a lot of information about Him.

THE LORD JESUS CHRIST SAYS that even today many religious leaders do not recognize Him, their Messiah, even when He speaks to them or writes to them through His (very few) prophets and servants. Their pride, reasoning and judgments are even today “killing” the Son of God, which is to say, “separating” Him –The Truth– from His people! They

also incite people against Him by forbidding people to read or hear His Truth. They are not entering the Kingdom of Heaven, yet they shut it up against all those that desire to enter in. And today many are also appearing beautiful and saintly outwardly and worthy of following, but within they are equally full of dead men's bones and uncleanness! (Mt. 23:13,27) How many of them are like that? Those leaders that can SEE the above truth do not belong into the count. All the rest do... because they don't see their self, their soul, their heart (Jer. 17:9,10) and what is in it, what is the ability and capacity of their soul to sin, to depart from their Messiah, their Saviour and do their own will rather than His Will. Even today they truly do not know what they are doing. (Lk. 23:33,34)

The Lord desires to show us yet another extraordinary example which we should diligently consider in our soul and spirit. It shall show us that the above paragraphs are not far fetched and unbelievable at all. Rather, they are facts and to be expected in the natural life of any human being with no respect to persons.

Many believers know the story of King Solomon, how he was chosen by the Lord to be the King of Israel, how he received a great wisdom and understanding and riches and fame from the Lord, how Solomon loved the Lord and also how the Lord loved Solomon. (1Ki. 3:3// 2Sam. 12:24) He also lifted up his hands being on his knees praising the Lord, vowing to keep all His Commandments and Statutes and declaring that the LORD IS GOD and that there is none else. (1Ki. 8:54-60) The Lord, his God, was with him and magnified him exceedingly. (2Chr. 1:1) But as he grew older he departed from all his vows and from the Lord and started to do evil in the sight of the Lord. And the Lord was angry with Solomon because his heart was turned from the Lord God of Israel, Who had appeared to him twice! (1Ki. 11:4-9)

Even those believers and theologians that may have a detailed knowledge of the life and deeds of Solomon may not have drawn from that knowledge its spiritual meaning

and consequences for their own Christian life and ministry. There are two facts to be considered here:

1) We may start our Christian life and also our ministry in the most blessed way. We may love the Lord and He may love us and be with us. He may bless us even exceedingly in various ways. But that is no guarantee that we will continue on that road and that the Lord will be with us all the way!! We may start departing from our way of blessings and of His Presence with us without being aware of it and our deception will grow according to the increase of our spiritual pride. Our ministry will start losing its former life and trueness and will become mechanical, religious and dead. The larger the ministry we build, the more people and fame it attracts, the greater the danger of the spiritual pride and the departure from the Lord. Our success shall blind our eyes and blur our spiritual vision which we may have had in the beginning. We may start doing evil in the sight of Our Lord (not in our own sight – Pr. 16:2) and He may become angry with us... and we may not consider it at all! We dwell in our (glorious) past not realizing that in the present we would not stand the testing of the Lord and would fall. All the knowledge and wisdom of Solomon did not help him one bit to preserve the original blessings and the Presence of the Lord. Our increased knowledge and wisdom may fail us exactly in the same way! Is this not a true TRAGEDY?

2) What may cause our heart to depart from the Lord and become religious are not only “strange women”, but innumerable other lusts and desires and goals in our heart. When we love our denomination or religious organization or sect, we love a “*strange woman*”. Women represent religious entities; Israel-Church are represented by a Woman, (Rev. 12:1) so is Babylon, (Rev. 17:3-6,9,18) and the seven churches of the Book of Revelation (Is. 4:1). When we love our ministry, our preaching, teaching, healing, even publishing ministry, etc., that we “do for the Lord”, they may become our idols; we may have lost the sight of and the love for the Lord Himself. We are quite able and prone to glean more glory from our religious works “for the Lord” than our

Lord can glean from our works “for Him”. Our life and ministry are the fruit of our heart and it always “betrays us”; it shows our “true” relationship with the Lord and His Presence in or absence from our ministry. We should be able to see it, if we have eyes to see. The fact that we may be faithful and diligent ministers “living and working for the Lord” does not mean that we are “altogether acceptable” in His eyes. Faithful and diligent servants may also be spiritually foolish, proud, inconsiderate, independent, closed to any advice, deaf to the voice of the Lord. They resist the Lord in making them perfect and fruitful. Can you SEE this fact? It is not easy to see, yet, it is true. The Lord knows.

Religion is not the tool of the Lord, it is the tool of Satan... to deceive and destroy being undetected and hidden under the “robe of religion”. Religion is man’s idea about God and it is always FALSE! Proud believers are never conscious of the fact that they are proud and that the Lord is not with them. Pride is blind and stupid, it breeds unbelief and idolatry and other “fruit” of flesh. Furthermore, pride is a very strong force in our soul and it shall not depart from our soul by our wish or prayer or a one-time deliverance.

PRIDE, UNBELIEF AND IDOLATRY REIGN IN THE
CHURCH OF JESUS CHRIST. THEIR FRUIT IS
SPIRITUAL BLINDNESS AND MISERY.

Even these lines will not be read by many leaders though these lines will be sent to them. And if some of them would come this far and read these lines, they shall not believe what they read. Their image will not allow them to see and believe that these lines may indeed come from their own Messiah, Who, despite resisting them, (**Jam. 4:6// 1Pet. 5:5**) may be yet warning them.

IT IS NOT ANY MAN, IT IS THE LORD JESUS CHRIST THAT WRITES TO THEM EVEN THESE LINES AND WARNS THEM! THE MAN IS JUST AN INSTRUMENT CALLED BY THE LORD FOR THIS PURPOSE! AND TODAY THERE ARE JUST FEW SUCH MEN THROUGH WHOM THE LORD SPEAKS TRUTH TO HIS CHURCH!

WHY CAN THEY NOT BELIEVE? THE SINGLE REASON IS THAT THE CROSS OF CHRIST MIGHT BE IN THEIR NOTES AND SERMONS BUT IT IS **NOT** FOUND IN THEIR SOUL! THEY MIGHT APPEAR TO WALK WITH THE LORD, BUT THEY ARE THE ENEMIES OF THE CROSS OF CHRIST MINDING EARTHLY THINGS. (**PHIL. 3:18,19**) AND THEIR OWN CROSS (**Mt. 16:24**) MAY HAVE NEVER EVEN BEEN IN THEIR NOTES, LET ALONE IN THEIR LIFE! THEY CONSIDER ME PROUD BECAUSE I WRITE THIS TRUTH.

The Lord says that it is the leaders that are always responsible for all those that they may have misled, deceived, coerced to follow their own way or otherwise obstructed their way to the Kingdom whether they did it, or still do it, consciously or ignorantly. They shall be responsible also for preaching or teaching things, which are not found in the Word or are contradicting the Word, for preaching or teaching their soulish ideas and wisdom, which may have damaged His people greatly making them similar enemies of His Cross as such leaders have been.

They shall also be responsible for failing to receive His Light, live it and give it to His people that they may also live by that Light, which He has been sending through His servants and prophets even in these last days. Furthermore, they failed to warn His people from the impending disaster, which is coming for all those walking on the broad way where they are preserving their old life rather than denying it. *“Cursed is every minister that keeps his sword (Word of God) from blood”*, that is, from drawing the old sinful life from believers’ souls (**Jer. 48:10b**) because the “old life” is the blood of all flesh. (**Lev. 17:14**)

* * *

Finally, the Lord is giving us the picture of His Church at the end of this world and the translation of His people before the wrath of God is poured upon this world. This picture is also contained in His Word in **Mt. 24:37a** by which Word this whole Chapter is named and it is the following section of this Chapter which is devoted to this Word and its spiritual meaning.

Today there exist many books, brochures, sermons and teachings concerning the end of this world and the rapture of the Church. It would not be possible to read them all in time for the real rapture. Most of them are man's ideas, understanding, imaginations or interpretations which do not express the spiritual Truth of the Word of God.

So, let us ASK the Lord to grant us what He desires to give us, not to our natural understanding, but to our spirit.

“But as the days of Noah were, so shall also the coming of the Son of Man be. For as in the days that were before the Flood they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noah entered into the ark, and knew not until the Flood came, and took them all away; so shall also the coming of the Son of Man be.” (Mt. 24:37-39)

I have heard this Word preached and have read it in the Bible many times, yet, I have never seen the depth of the spiritual truth and meaning of this Word for us until now, in what the Lord is showing now. That is why I write about it now so that the spiritual truth of God may be received by all hearts that are open to Him and that that truth may open their eyes and help prepare them IN SPIRIT for His Coming and for their translation from the earth.

There are many signs and prophecies concerning this end time period being fulfilled even before our very eyes. The Lord may be giving His Light and Wisdom to the open hearts and minds to record these true signs and prophecies and publish them so we may see the Hand of God in all His Creation how it fulfils His Will. These records present the historical facts and the comparison of the prophecies with today's events. They may not give the spiritual significance of His Word for believers except a warning how close we are to His Coming and that “we must be prepared”. Now, it is true that “we must be prepared”, but how we must be prepared is not recorded. Our knowledge of the prophecies without their true “hidden” spiritual meaning is not sufficient!

We must receive from the Lord the spiritual picture and reality of His Word quoted above.

The Flood was God's Judgment upon the FIRST GENERATION of mankind that "replenished the earth" according to His Word to Adam and Eve. (**Gen. 1:28**) Those peoples were the generation, which sprang from the seed of Cain and from the seed of Seth. Let us see that Cain left God without any true repentance as a CURSED MAN and vagabond! (**Gen. 4:11,12**) Yet Cain was a religious man, who worshipped God, built an altar to Him and offered Him the best he could produce with his own knowledge and wisdom (see again p. 80). He talked to God face-to-face and was in His Presence. (**Gen. 4:16**) This can be said only about a few people. But the generation that came from him and "replenished the earth" were like Cain in their character and life, they remained "religious" but also wicked, cursed and vagabonds at the same time.

On the other hand, Seth was a blessed man and "another seed instead of Abel, whom Cain slew". (**Gen. 4:25**) When Seth begat his son Enos "***THEN began men to call upon the Name of the LORD***". (**Gen. 4:26**)

The blessedness of Seth may also be seen in the fact that ALL THE GREAT MEN OF GOD, who walked with God and through whom our Salvation was made possible, came from the seed of Seth. They include names like Enoch (who was taken by God – **Gen. 5:24**), Lamech (the father of Noah), Noah, Shem (the blessed son of Noah – **Gen. 9:26**), Abraham, Isaac, Jacob, Judah, David (**Acts 13:22**) and finally Our Lord Jesus, Who is also in this lineage though not from the seed of man. (**Lk. 3:23-38**)

What the Lord is calling us now to see, understand and bear in our heart as one of the most important spiritual facts in this chapter, is the following.

It should not be surprising to any open minded believer that the generation from the seed of Cain reached the point in time where their wickedness became great and

every imagination of the thoughts of their heart became evil continually. The earth became corrupt and filled with violence! (**Gen. 6:5,11,12**) But it should be shocking to all open minded believers that...

THE GENERATION FROM THE BLESSED SEED OF SETH BECAME EQUALLY WICKED AND THAT EVERY IMAGINATION OF THE THOUGHTS OF THEIR HEART BECAME EQUALLY EVIL CONTINUALLY! THEY BECAME UNDISTINGUISHABLE FROM THE GENERATION FROM THE SEED OF CAIN! GOD IS NOT SETTING THE GENERATION OF SETH AS BETTER THAN THE GENERATION OF CAIN! BOTH GENERATIONS WERE DESTROYED BY THE FLOOD!

Though there were great men of God in the lineage of Seth, yet, BOTH PEOPLES in general were growing worse with time. This deterioration has been happening to all generations, all empires and all societies since the beginning of time until now no matter what character or what life they started with. These RELIGIOUS PEOPLES deteriorated into such a corruption, wickedness and evil during the period from Cain and Seth to Noah that God said to Noah: ***“The end of ALL FLESH is come before Me.”*** (**Gen. 6:13a**) Here “flesh” is to be understood primarily as “spiritual, sinful nature” and not as a physical human body (see also point **2A** below).

We may conclude this paragraph by saying that both these generations from Cain and from Seth were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage and KNEW NOT THAT THEY WERE CORRUPT AND WICKED AND WERE OBLIVIOUS AS TO WHAT JUDGMENT WAS COMING UPON THEM!

In **Mt. 24:37-39** the Lord says that IT IS THE SAME TODAY and it will continue until He comes for His Bride, at His Third Coming! (The Lord has four comings to the earth and they are described on pp. 290,291^[8])

Now, let us look deeper into the SPIRITUAL PICTURE seen in the New Testament and SEE what the Lord is showing us by His Spirit.

Even children in any Sunday school know the story of Noah and can describe the ark and the animals therein. When we were children, we spoke as children, understood as children and thought as children; but when we became men, we put away childish things. (1Cor. 13:11) The question is: Have we really become men? Have we become men in spiritual seeing, speaking, understanding and thinking? Or have we become only religious in our understanding and thinking and remained little children in spiritual matters and understanding? (1Cor. 3:1,2// Heb. 5:12-14) It is a highly individual question and each of us must answer it for himself.

But what does the Lord desire to tell us today in saying **“as the days of Noah were”**? Do these words of Our Lord have more than just logical meaning to us?

Well, let us consider the following. First, we should always remember the principle that what God was doing in the Old Testament in the physical world has a reflective picture and purpose in the spiritual world in the New Testament. Second, in the next points, we will express the physical facts in the Old Testament (**A**) and their spiritual meanings in the New Testament (**B**) so we could see the necessary depth of the spiritual picture of **Mt. 24:37,38**. It should also give us the necessary spiritual insight as to WHAT DO WE NEED TO DO TO BE PREPARED FOR HIS COMING ACCORDING TO HIS JUDGMENT AND BE TAKEN UP BEFORE THE TRIBULATION. (**Mt. 24:40,41// Rev. 12:5**) You may also read an interesting book “Christians will go through the Tribulation^[17]” by Jim McKeever.

Let us now see and understand that the Word in **Mt. 24:40,41** is one of the forepictures of the pre-Tribulation rapture. Here the Lord is not speaking to pagans, but to His chosen people of Israel and the Church. Hence, in both verses **“the one shall be taken, and the other left”** the Lord speaks about believers! The one that shall be left is NOT A PAGAN as taught in many churches! The proof is also in the next verse where the Lord says **“Watch therefore: for you (two in the field and two women at the mill) know not what hour YOUR LORD does come.”** (Mt. 24:42)

Pagans have no Lord to watch at which hour He might come. The same Word is repeated in **Mt. 25:13** right after the foolish virgins demanded their entry. (**Mt. 25:11**) And none of the virgins represents pagans. In that parable of the Kingdom, the Lord gives the same situation: one (wise) virgin shall be taken and one (foolish) left, one (wise) shall enter the Kingdom and one (foolish) shall face a closed door and a not very appealing word from the Lord: ***“Verily I say unto you, I know you not.”*** (**Mt. 25:12**)

The Lord now desires that we would also see where *“the one shall be taken”*. When His disciples asked Him the same question: ***“Where, Lord?”*** (**Lk. 17:37**), He gave them a rather unusual answer saying ***“Wheresoever the body is, there will the eagles be gathered together.”*** Since there may be many intellectual interpretations, some of which may be outright absurd or misleading, let us see what the Lord would lead us to.

(1) The word **“body”** here points to a “carcase”, (**Mt. 24:28**) which means a “dead body”, body without life. We know that every man born from Adam is “dead” and is only made alive in Christ. (**1Cor. 15:22**) That includes all pagans AND all carnal believers, who “live” in the First Adam and not in Christ, hence, their SOUL IS DEAD! We have already covered this topic. Here, in the spiritual sense, the “body”, the “carcase” points to the DEAD PART of the Body of Christ.

(2) The word **“eagles”** has two meanings: negative and positive. The negative meaning is that eagle was an unclean fowl and not to be eaten as it devoured dead flesh. (**Lev. 11:13**) That is why some commentators have interpreted eagles as “vultures” which is a human, logical understanding and is misleading and unacceptable in interpreting the Word in **Lk. 17:37**

The positive meaning is as follows: When we wait on the Lord, we can renew our (spiritual) strength; we shall mount up with wings as eagles. This shows the strength of eagles. (**Is. 40:31**). An eagle is also swift (**Deut. 28:49// Job 9:26**); it dwells on the rock, her eyes behold far, her young

“suck up blood” and she is where the slain (dead) are. (**Job 39:27-30**) When the Lord found Jacob in a desert land, He instructed him and led him about as an eagle stirs up her nest, flutters over her young, spreads her wings, takes them and bears them on her wings (teaches them to fly, which is like unto walking on water, which spiritually means living by faith). (**Deut. 32:9-12**) Most importantly, eagle is one of the four faces of the physical representation of Our Lord in His appearance to Ezekiel, (**Ez. 1:10**) where He is **Man**, **Lion** (king of beasts), **Eagle** (king of fowl) and an **Ox** (king of domestic animals – as a Servant, **Jn. 13:3-5**). It is also true about the four living creatures which are before the Throne of God. (**Rev. 4:7**)

(3) The meaning of **Lk. 17:37** is then twofold:

(a) Physical eagles (with other fowls) that fly in the midst of Heaven shall gather together unto the “Great Supper of the Great God” (**Rev. 19:16-18,21b**) and may PHYSICALLY cleanse the earth from the carnage of the Battle of Armageddon. This is to be viewed as God’s Judgment in the physical world at the end of the Tribulation.

(b) Spiritual eagles are the believers that dwell on the Rock (live in Christ, **1Cor. 10:4**) and “fly” (live by faith), they are where the dead (carnal) believers are. They are the Overcomers that have been TAKEN UP, (**Mt. 24:40,41// Rev. 12:5**) and they include the Remnant from the Church (**Rev. 14:3-5**) and the anointed-sealed Remnant from Israel. (**Rev. 7:4-8**) They will also be gathered together “as eagles” to dispense the SPIRITUAL Judgment of the Lord upon all that is DEAD in the Body of Christ (Israel-Church) and bring Life into it. This will be the task especially for the Remnant from Israel as it is described later on. Since these believers have all been transformed into the Image of Christ, then their physical representation is also composed of the same four faces, one of which is an **Eagle**. And as young eagles “suck up blood”, (**Job 39:30**) so these shall “draw blood (old life in soul) by the sword (Word of God)” as per **Jer. 48:10** (this was already noted before).

Let me conclude point (3) by saying that both above cases, (a) physical and (b) spiritual may take place simultaneously at the time of that particular Judgment of God. The Lord, however, was pointing primarily to case (b) when replying to His Disciples since they were interested in knowing where the people would be taken.

* * *

Let us now return to the Word in **Mt. 24:37-39** and see its true spiritual picture and its meaning for us today.

1A) The RELIGIOUS PEOPLES in Noah's days which came from both the seed of Cain AND from the seed of Seth did not fear God, were indifferent to Him, to His Word, ways and requirements for their life EXCEPT THE REMNANT from the seed of Seth. The peoples had ears but did not hear what God was telling them through Noah for many years. They were fully preoccupied with their self-interests, prosperity and pleasures of life and cared for nothing else. Corruption, wickedness and evil governed their lives. They might have shown outwardly signs of their "religiosity", but in their "flesh" (spiritual wickedness and sinfulness) they were intolerable and an abomination to God!

Out of all these peoples on the earth, only Noah, a just man and perfect* in his generation found Grace in the eyes of the Lord. (**Gen. 6:8,9**) Noah and "his house" – his wife, three sons and their three wives, EIGHT PEOPLE altogether – were saved from the Flood. As we know, "eight" in the Scripture means a "new beginning" or resurrection.

To be perfect in the Lord's eyes means to **"PRESS toward the mark for the prize of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus." All believers, who are thus minded, (**Phil. 3:14,15**) who are after the heart of God (**Acts 13:22**) are perfect in the Judgment and the eyes of the Lord, but not in their own eyes and self-judgment.*

And God said unto Noah: **"Make an ark of gopher wood; rooms you shall make in the ark, and shall pitch**

it within and without with pitch. And this is the design which you shall make it of...” (Gen. 6:14,15a)

So God instructed Noah to build an ark of gopher wood and gave him a precise design. Its design was not left to Noah’s imagination and ideas. God did the same later on with Moses when He gave him the precise design of His Tabernacle and of the Ark of the Covenant and of all the other furnishings; nothing was left up to the ideas or imaginations of Moses or other men.

1B) The peoples in our days are EXACTLY THE SAME as those in Noah’s days! They now include pagans and the religious people, believers, who live, believe and act in the same worldly ways not only outwardly in bodies, but in their souls. Such believers do not fear God, they are indifferent to His Word, ways and requirements for their life. They have ears, but do not hear what God says to them through the “Noahs” of today.

And God is once more asking the “Noahs” of today, those that are perfect* in this SECOND GENERATION of mankind and who walk with Him, to prepare their “Ark” according to His spiritual instructions and precise design! Nothing is left up to the ideas or imaginations of men. This means that we must “build our knowledge of the Lord” precisely as the Scripture says. (Jn. 7:38) We do not build the Ark of gopher wood, but of the Word of God, which is Christ, and “pitch it” within and without with the Holy Spirit, so nothing will defile the Ark from outside (world) or from inside (brethren, who don’t walk and live by the Spirit – Phil. 3:18,19).

Let us now see that OUR ARK IS CHRIST IN OUR SOUL WHERE WE HAVE CRUCIFIED OUR FLESH! (Gal. 5:24) It is not sufficient that Christ be in our spirit, which applies to all born-again believers, but that He would be present and ruling our SOUL. All His “Noahs” which are perfect (Phil. 3:15) and found Grace in His eyes, and their families, the Overcomers (His Remnant), the crucified ones, they all are building their Arks by crucifying their flesh and sealing every “nook & cranny” of their soul against all evil.

THIS IS THE PREPARATION FOR HIS COMING! They all will pass safely in their Arks through the floods of God's pre-Tribulation Judgments and taken to the Throne of God. (Rev. 12:5, see more later) They will become a New Beginning for a brand New Mankind. All the other believers, soul-ish, carnal, uncrucified and disobedient ones, will be subdued to God's Judgments of Fire and will be either CONDEMNED BY THEM OR REFINED THROUGH THEM – by the SPIRIT OF JUDGMENT and by THE SPIRIT OF BURNING. (Is. 4:4, see also Ez. 1:13; more later)

God is also causing these new Noahs and their families to start entering into their Arks as they are being made ready, so God might SHUT THE DOOR OF THEIR ARK behind them. (Mt. 25:10// Gen. 7:16) To "enter the Ark" means to "grow up into Christ in all things", then to abide in Him and He abide in our SOUL (not only in our SPIRIT), to stay in the Ark and not go out. TO GROW UP INTO CHRIST MEANS TO ENLARGE HIS PRESENCE AND HIS RULE IN OUR OWN SOUL, TO PUT ON OUR NEW MAN! If believers are not growing up into Christ, they are not entering the Ark or they do not abide in Christ, they go out of the Ark, then men gather them and cast them into the FIRE and they are burned. (Eph. 4:15// Jn. 15:4a,6) There are no other alternatives.

Let us also see that no individual believer will be able to build his own Ark and enter in and be saved from the coming Judgment. There cannot be "one-man" Arks. Minimum two or more living members of the Body of Christ (Mt. 18:20) are able to grow up into Christ and abide in Him, which means, to enter the Ark and stay in. Noah was not called alone, but Noah and his house was called to enter in! While Redemption is individual, the Salvation is corporate.

.....

2A) When God said to Noah ***"The end of all flesh is come before Me"*** He meant first the spiritual flesh, which is man's sinful nature, then the physical flesh. It is sin, evil and wickedness that God hated and not physical human bodies, which are neutral. This is also clear from Gen. 6:3 where

God says ***“My Spirit shall not always strive with man, for that he also is (sinful) flesh;”***

2B) The end of all SINFUL FLESH is come before God also in these days. In this respect, THE DAYS OF NOAH ARE HERE! We must repeat the following fact and truth. The Lord shows clearly that the peoples involved in this Judgment of sinful flesh are not only pagans, but all the believers, who are not perfect* as Noah was; who walk, but not with God as Noah did; who are in their heart, mind and will the enemies of the Cross of Christ. (Phil. 3:18,19) These enemies of the Cross have never allowed the Cross to deal with their sinful nature whether they did it consciously or ignorantly because they were deceived; therefore, in their soul they are like unto pagans. Many Christians are in their nature and character worse than many good hearted pagans. This is a true paradox, but it is reality. Do you have your own experiences? I do... and they are not rare.

.....

3A) Then the Lord said unto Noah: ***“Come, you and all your house into the ark;”*** (Gen. 7:1a) ***“For yet seven days, and I will cause it to rain upon the earth...”*** (Gen. 7:4a) So Noah and his house entered the ark seven days before it started to rain.

3B) The Noahs of these days will also be entering their Ark seven years before the Great Tribulation begins when it shall start raining the Judgments of God upon the entire world and upon the rest of the Israel-Church. They are kept from the temptations and God’s Judgments that are to “try them that dwell upon the earth”. Those that live and walk in their natural soul (flesh), dwell upon the earth; those that live and walk in Spirit and whose sinful flesh was crucified, (Gal. 5:24) “dwell in Heaven” and have already received the crown, that is, their place in the Kingdom of Heaven and they are READY. These Overcomers are advised by the Lord to hold fast their crown that no man would take it from them. (Rev. 3:10,11)

.....

4A) And when Noah and his house and all the animals entered the ark as God commanded them, GOD SHUT THE DOOR behind them! (**Gen. 7:16// Mt. 25:10**)

4B) All the world, pagans AND BELIEVERS that had rejected or are rejecting their cross consciously or ignorantly, will find no reception with God, but a closed door. They shall be rewarded for their works. The works in **Mt. 16:24** are the most important works of faith for any believer to be done faithfully and continually throughout his earthly life and the Lord will reward him chiefly for those works. (**Mt. 16:27**) Building of religious organizations, printing of religious literature and leaflets, attending religious services, singing and giving offerings shall not be rewarded as we might imagine or hope for. Why? All such works can be done by carnal believers, positive thinkers, theologians, etc.

Only a few, in comparison to the other multitudes, found the narrow way which leads to an open door to God. (**Mt. 7:14// Lk. 12:32**) These few have been crucified – circumcised in heart (**Acts 7:51// Rom. 2:29**) Circumcision points to the Cross. (**Col. 2:11**) As we know, Abraham received faith and was justified – redeemed – before he was circumcised, (**Rom. 4:11**) before he was led to his cross! This also proves that the redeemed believer has to be “circumcised in heart – crucified in the flesh of his soul” before he can be accepted into the Presence of the Holy Lord.

When these crucified believers, the wise virgins with OIL in their vessels, the Bride of Christ, the Remnant, the Man-child enter the Ark, the DOOR WILL BE SHUT. Again, God will shut the door and not the Remnant. When the other believers will then come and ask the Lord to open the door, He will tell them: ***“Verily I say unto you, I know you not.”*** (**Mt. 25:10-12**)

.....

5A) Noah and his house FOUND GRACE in the eyes of God. They represent the FIRST REMNANT, FIRST RIGHTEOUS SEED from the corrupt First Generation of mankind.

5B) Similarly today, there is a SECOND REMNANT in the midst of this evil and wicked Second Generation of mankind, which also FOUND GRACE in the eyes of God and will be saved from the “Flood” of destruction which is coming upon this earth. The Church at large will not be saved from the Tribulation, but will be saved from the wrath of God (**1Thess. 5:9// Rev. 16:1-17**) which starts after the last trump. (**1Cor. 15:52**) Why so late?

Note that the last three trumps are also called **woes!** (**Rev. 8:13; 9:12; 11:14**) And woes were promised by God unto all those that “work iniquity” both in Israel and in the Church. As touching the Church, read **Mt. 7:11,21-23; 13:41; 23:13-16,23-29// Lk. 13:24-28// Rom. 6:19// 1Cor. 3:16,17// Rev. 2:11; 3:5**. As touching Israel, read **Is. 5:20,21; 30:9,10; 31:1// Jer. 22:13; 23:1// Ez. 13:3// Mic. 2:1** and other applicable passages. So these **woes** are also designed by God to change these workers of iniquity into believers worthy of God and of His Kingdom. Even in these **woes** we ought to see the Love, Grace and Mercy of God toward believers.

.....

6A) Then God destroyed all SINFUL FLESH in the earth according to His Word. This was the END OF THE FIRST GENERATION OF MANKIND, which began from the seed of Adam and continued through the seed of Cain and Seth until Noah. God did it both in the physical realm and also in the spiritual realm.

6B) God is going to destroy the SINFUL FLESH the second time, this time not by Flood but by **FIRE**... by the SPIRIT OF JUDGMENT AND BY THE SPIRIT OF BURNING. (**Deut. 4:24-28// Is. 4:4// Ez. 1:12,13// Heb. 12:29**) This will be the end of the SECOND GENERATION OF MANKIND. That will also be the beginning of the THIRD GENERATION OF MANKIND which will live during the Kingdom of Heaven on earth. There will also be natural people, who survived the Tribulation and will multiply until the end of the Kingdom. This will be possible since the Lord will shorten the days of the Tribulation otherwise no flesh would be saved. (**Mt. 24:22**)

.....

7A) BY FAITH Noah did as God instructed him and warned him of things that were not seen as yet, and prepared an ark to the saving of his house, by which work of faith, he condemned the world and became the heir of righteousness which is by faith. (**Heb. 11:7**)

7B) BY FAITH today's Remnant, the Man-child (**Rev. 12:5**) is preparing the Ark to the saving of Itself and shall thereby condemn the world and all those that keep living the worldly life in their soul. The Remnant shall become the heir of righteousness and will be caught up to the Throne of God. And the WOMAN, the WORLDLY UNCRUCIFIED CHURCH AND ISRAEL (that were made ONE – **Eph. 2:11-15**), shall flee to the wilderness, to the place prepared for Her by God. (**Rev. 12:6**)

.....

8A) And after the Flood, God said to Noah and his sons the same words that He said to Adam and Eve: ***“Be fruitful and multiply, and replenish the earth.”*** (**Gen. 9:1**)

This is a new beginning for mankind, we may also say, this is the SECOND GENERATION OF MANKIND, which the Lord God established to bring Him the desired fruit of the earth. It came forth from the righteous seed of Noah, and we know that this generation has also failed and is failing miserably before our very eyes, just as the generation from the righteous seed of Seth failed and was destroyed.

Now, within this SECOND GENERATION OF MANKIND God established yet a NEW RACE from another righteous seed – Abraham, the Friend of God, the father of faith, and that new race, ISRAEL, has also failed... except for its Remnant.

And from this Remnant, from the righteous seed of Abraham, God started a brand NEW MANKIND from the HOLY SEED OF THE LAST ADAM, CHRIST JESUS and whosoever received His Seed FOUND GRACE in the eyes of God. And whosoever grew up from that Seed never failed and will never fail because this Seed and Its Fruit are ETERNAL!

But also out of this SECOND GENERATION OF MANKIND many failed because they had not received the Seed given by God in His Son, which are all the pagans of this world. And from those that did receive the Seed, the true believers, only few had grown up (or have been growing up also in these days) – this is the LAST REMNANT! He is considered worthy of the Kingdom already now (**1Thess. 2:12// 2Thess. 1:5**) and shall be taken up before the Great Tribulation at the latest, as mentioned above.

8B) The “Flood” of destruction which is coming upon the earth is divided into two parts:

a) seven years of Tribulation, which will be upon the whole world and upon all the carnal, worldly and uncrucified believers until the seventh trump when the main body of the Church shall be raptured, as already stated above,

b) the wrath of God in the last days of the Tribulation contained in the seven vials, which shall be poured upon all the world (**Rev. 16:1-17**), but not upon the Church.

When the Kingdom of Heaven on earth is established, there will come forth the THIRD GENERATION OF MANKIND which shall have the same chance for 1,000 years to show itself, whether their heart will be after God or not; whether they will be willing to seek God, believe Him and walk and live in His Spirit or not; whether they will bring forth the fruit of the earth desired by God or not. What shall be the result? After 1,000 years Satan shall be loosed out of his prison and shall go out to deceive the nations of this THIRD GENERATION OF MANKIND the number of whom shall be as the sand of the seas.

And these nations shall be deceived by Satan and shall compass “the camp of the saints and the beloved City” (Old Jerusalem). And **FIRE** will come down from God and shall devour them! (**Rev. 20:7-10**) Can we even imagine the situation described by this Word of God? Can we compare and realize the “ratio” of peoples in the “camp of the saints” and the nations as the sand of the seas? Isn’t it again very, very few against great multitudes?

We may ask ourselves a very simple but fundamental question: How is it possible that this THIRD GENERATION OF MANKIND that had an unheard of privilege of living in the PERSONAL PRESENCE OF THE LIVING CHRIST JESUS AS THEIR KING and in a total ABSENCE OF SATAN and of his temptations for 1,000 years, could again be so easily deceived and join Satan in his last quest for power? Do we know the answer to this very simple but fundamental question? Do we REALLY? The true answer should send shivers down our spine and should shake our whole being. Why?

THE ANSWER SHOWS THE ABSOLUTE, COMPLETE AND IRREVERSIBLE DEPRAVITY, EVIL AND WORTHLESSNESS OF HUMAN BEINGS AND **HOW MUCH** WE TRULY DESERVE HELL, DEATH AND A COMPLETE DESTRUCTION!

IT ALSO SHOWS THE ABSOLUTE, COMPLETE AND UNFATHOMABLE **VALUE AND GLORY OF GOD'S GRACE** TOWARD US ALL! WITHOUT HIS GRACE WE WOULD ALL WALK WITH SATAN AND THINK HOW GREAT WE ARE! THERE WOULD BE NOT ONE HUMAN BEING WALKING ON THE FACE OF THE EARTH WORTHY OF SAVING HIS LIFE.

AND THIS GOD'S GRACE IS STILL AVAILABLE TO ANY HUMAN BEING, PAGAN OR BELIEVER, WHO DESIRES IN HIS HEART AND MIND AND SOUL TO LAY DOWN HIS OLD SINFUL LIFE BEFORE GOD AND RECEIVE FROM GOD HIS NEW SINLESS LIFE THAT WILL LAST FOR EVER.

Then all the peoples of THESE GENERATIONS OF MANKIND (except for the Overcomers) will be judged at the Great White Throne Judgment. (**Rev. 20:11-15**) The NEW GENERATION – NEW MANKIND that grew up from the Seed of the Son of God will be represented by the NEW JERUSALEM – THE BRIDE AND WIFE OF THE LAMB (**Rev. 21:9,10// Rev. 3:12**) and the nations of them which are saved shall walk in the Light of It. (**Rev. 21:24**)

Another book could be written about the New Jerusalem alone and all the magnificent features of this City of God, the Bride and Wife of Christ, and their spiritual mean-

ing. They are all described in **Rev. 21:10** to **22:5** and every reader is well advised to read them and ponder them in his heart and mind and conscience. We will not touch any features of this magnificent New Jerusalem except one, which feature has a special meaning for the topic of this book.

The twelve gates of the City were twelve pearls, each gate was one pearl! (**Rev. 21:21a**) The gate, of course, indicates the point of entry as nobody could get into the City except through the gates. The pearl is not a precious stone or a precious metal; rather, it is the product of a living creature. It is formed in the soft body of an oyster caused by a grain of sand which penetrated its shell and irritated or wounded its soft tissue. If the oyster could not get rid of it by pushing it out, the oyster went through a process of suffering and pain as it was patiently covering the grain of sand with the secretion from the glands of its own body until a pearl was formed. This may serve as an example of a believer, who similarly had to suffer and be in pain and in the process of overcoming by patiently covering the causes of his wounds and irritants with his grace, love and patience. THIS believer will have the right to “be the gate” of that City or become any other part of that City, because the Bride and Wife of the Lamb **IS** the City of New Jerusalem. (**Rev. 21:9b,10**) He that has the heart to understand, let him understand.

We stop here as any further consideration of the New Jerusalem would be far beyond the scope of this book.

THE END AND THE NEW BEGINNING

Since the days of Noah are already here and the coming of the “Flood of His Judgments – the Tribulation” is about to begin in a matter of very few years, it is desirable that we should see and understand the current signs and events that will point us to the reality of our time. “God’s clock” is ticking and when its bell shall ring in a few years, all the kingdoms of this world will come to their END and the time of God’s Everlasting Kingdom shall BEGIN.

Where we shall be and what we shall do will depend entirely on every one of us, on the decisions of our heart and will; on our responses to God’s Word and His calling. Shall we “press” toward our high calling in Christ Jesus, or shall we do nothing? (**Phil. 3:14**) Today we decide on many issues of our destiny and how we will get there. What we sow today, we shall reap at the END. If we keep going on the same road and do not change our course in any way, we will come to the end of our particular road not necessarily knowing what it shall be. What we believe may not be so at all. We should at least seek assurances of what the end of OUR road, on which we now walk, shall be and avoid unpleasant disappointments, surprises even tragedies when we arrive at its end. Shouldn’t we at least enquire of the Lord and search our roadmap (His Word) and take seriously what He is showing us also in this book? It would definitely be wise and prudent from us.

BEFORE WE APPROACH THIS SUBJECT OF THE END OF TIMES AND OF THE NEW BEGINNING (SEE ALSO THE TIMELINE AND THE ADDENDUM), WE MUST REALIZE THAT OUR LOGIC WILL NOT BE THE ALL SUFFICIENT INSTRUMENT TO APPREHEND THE TRUTH. WE WILL DEAL MAINLY WITH SPIRITUAL EVENTS IN THE SPIRITUAL WORLD. THE EARTHLY, PHYSICAL EVENTS WILL NOT BE THAT IMPORTANT AND THUS OUR INTELLECT MAY NOT BE OF MUCH HELP. WE MUST ACCEPT THIS SIMPLE FACT, IF WE ARE TO SEE THE UNSEEN SPIRITUAL FACTS THAT LEAD TO ETERNITY AND TO OUR OWN DESTINY.

The Timeline of God for the events of these last days which are before us, for the time and events of the END and of the New BEGINNING, started with Prophet Daniel (**Dan. 9:24-27**). Out of the “seventy weeks” shown to him, the sixty-nine weeks (69x7=483 years) had already passed up to the death of the Messiah. Then two millennia of the New Testament started with the establishment of the Church. The Church has never been a separate entity built by the Lord apart from Israel. Israel and the Church have always been ONE, THE CHURCH HAS BEEN GROWING OUT OF ISRAEL.

The Lord desires at this point that we would SEE and understand that the Church has been a NEW SPIRITUAL SHOOT GROWING OUT OF ISRAEL INCLUDING THE GENTILES WHO WERE LATER GRAFTED IN. THE ROOT OF ISRAEL – the original olive tree – has always been the Messiah, Jesus Christ, a JEW from the Tribe of Judah. Her first 12 branches, the Apostles, were all JEWS (Mt. 10:2-4), and Her first thousands of members were also JEWS, with some possible exceptions. She started to grow out of Jerusalem, the JEWISH Holy City. Read also **Rom. 11:16-33**. So the Salvation is of the JEW (**Jn. 4:22**) and WITHOUT JEWS THE CHURCH WOULD NOT EXIST!

The last, seventieth week of Daniel (7 years) is before us. It is known as the Tribulation period, also as the Jacob’s trouble (**Deut. 4:30,31// Jer. 30:7**) and its last 3½ years are also called the Great Tribulation. (**Mt. 24:21**)

In order that this seventieth week be also fulfilled, the following events or preparations must take place (for points A1-A6 below, see also a research book “The New Temple and the Second Coming^{[13]”} by Grant R. Jeffrey).

A1) The Third Temple of God must be built in Jerusalem and the animal sacrifices performed as in the Old Testament. Though this is an enormous and complicated task which 2-3 decades ago was doubtful, unimaginable even unrealistic, today IT IS READY TO PROCEED! The new place for the Temple has been researched and chosen based on

the archeological proofs. Its construction would not interfere with the existing Islamic Dome of the Rock or Al Aqsa Mosque as was previously thought. Also, complete architectural plans of the Third Temple are ready so that its construction may begin as soon as “God gives His sign”.

A2) The new priests from the tribe of Levi have been selected and are being trained to perform their Temple duties according to the laws of Moses and the instructions from the new Sanhedrin, the Highest Court of Israel in all religious matters. This new Sanhedrin has been reestablished and it convened in January 2005, in Jerusalem. This Assembly has been very much involved in all matters and decisions of this most important project in the religious life of Israel in this end time. They make sure that all the details of the Law of Moses are meticulously met. The final deliverance and Salvation of Israel depend also on this Third Temple, and the Temple depends on other things and details briefly mentioned below.

A3) All the Temple furnishings and accessories have been either recreated or found at various locations specified in the old scrolls found mainly in the area of Qumran, at the Dead Sea. These furnishings include the four most important pieces, namely, the Ark of the Covenant, the table of shewbread, the table of incense and the menorah. The Ark of the Covenant is said to have been returned to Israel from Ethiopia, where it was hidden for over two millennia. It shall be installed into the Holiest of Holies once the Temple is finished. Many other furnishings and vessels have been either recreated according to their original designs or found buried and restored.

A4) The oil of anointing, which was a very precious product and indispensable for the anointing of the Temple furnishings and of the High Priest and his sons and which will also be used to anoint the Most Holy, that is to say, the Messiah, Lord Jesus Christ, (**Dan. 9:24**) was also found in a clay pot buried in a cave near Qumran in the Dead Sea area. (**Ex. 29:7,21; 30:23-33**)

A5) The special blue dye necessary for the garments of the priests was originally made from the rare kind of mollusks that lived in the Mediterranean Sea and died out during the two millennia. Now they were again discovered in the Red Sea and the blue dye was made and the first sets of priestly garments have been already prepared. (see **Ex. 28:31,33,37**)

A6) The red heifer, without any spot or blemish, which is a very rare animal in the world is required by the Law of Moses to be burned outside of the camp and its ashes used for the water of separation and purification. (**Num. 19:2-9**) Some of these red heifers without any spot or blemish were found outside of Israel, namely, in Finland and the United States and are being kept in Israel for the right time of sacrifice. The use of this water of purification was also prophesied by Ezekiel when he prophesied about the return of Jews from among the nations into their land of Israel and that they will be sprinkled by this clean water and they shall be clean. (**Ez. 36:24,25**) This water of purification is extremely important since it must be used also for purifying the building site and the foundation stones of the New Temple; without it the Temple cannot be built.

B) The Antichrist must appear on the world scene to take the power over the whole world. Because he will imitate the true Messiah in many signs and wonders, he will also be of Jewish origin as the true Messiah was. The vision given to Daniel says that he shall not regard the “*God of his fathers*”, which is always used for the Jewish generations and proves his Jewish roots. Nor will he regard “*the desire of women*” which shows that he will also be unmarried as the Lord was. (**Dan. 11:37**) Furthermore, he shall be of the lineage of David to imitate Christ. That man is already alive today as a young boy. Let us see and understand that he must be about 33½ years old when, in the middle of the seventieth week of Daniel, he presents himself as God desecrating the Third Temple of God. He then receives the deadly wound (as some Jewish zealot might kill him) and is “resurrected” to imitate the true Messiah, Who was also

about 33½ years old when He was crucified and resurrected. (**Rev. 13:3-9**) So, let the Church watch for a young man about 30 years old taking power over the New Roman Empire.

C) The war of Gog and Magog must take place as prophesied by Prophet Ezekiel (**Ez. Chpt. 38+39**) where the armies of Russia and her allies from the Islamic states of Middle East (chiefly Iran) and North Africa will attack Israel trying to annihilate it. They shall all be destroyed by the supernatural power of God and only the sixth part of them shall be left. (**Ez. 39:2**) This must take place 3½ years before the Tribulation period of seven years starts, since the people of Israel shall burn the captured weapons for seven years (**Ez. 39:9**) and they will not do it during the Great Tribulation period of 3½ years. Note that there will be another war of Gog and Magog against Jerusalem one thousand years later and God shall destroy them the second time by fire and that time for good. (**Rev. 20:7,8**)

D) The “SMALL REMNANT” (**Is. 1:9**) – the currently living Bride of Christ, (virgins that have oil in their souls and are ready – **Mt. 25:10**) the currently living Maiden of Shulamite, (**S.Sol. 8:5**) the currently living Man-child, (**Rev. 12:1,2,5**) the currently living Overcomers from **Rev. Chpts. 2** and **3** – all these believers, who truly love the Lord, who have crucified their flesh, (**Gal. 5:24**) cleansed the filthiness of their flesh and spirit, (**2Cor. 7:1**) went through FIRE and WATER and on to their perfection (**Ps. 66:12// Heb. 6:1,2**) walking on the narrow way, not on the Broadway, (**Mt. 7:13,14**), all THESE are being prepared to be TAKEN UP! (**Mt. 24:40,41**; more later)

The Bridegroom “steals” His Bride from the earth (**Mt. 25:1-10**) sometime before the Great Tribulation starts in the middle of the seventieth week of Daniel when the Antichrist takes power over the entire world and is revealed, who he truly is. (**2Thes. 2:3-9**) Up till that time, the Antichrist will only be ruling the so called “New Roman Empire” including the current European Union, but afterwards, he will rule the whole world. (**Rev. 13:5b,7b**)

When we considered the Word of God in **Is. 1:9** and its application for the Church (above paragraph and also pages 192,193) the words **“very small remnant”** may be misinterpreted in that the Man-child would only be a handful of people (like 8 people during the Flood). But the Man-child will be comprised of all Overcomers of all nations that will be alive on the earth and ready for their translation (the “field” and the “mill” are on the earth – **Mt. 24:40,41**). Concerning the Overcomers that had “died” before this rapture of the Bride, see point **G**) below and the Addendum.

There are two Remnants described in the Book of Revelation: one from the Church and one from Israel.

The Remnant from the Church is the 144,000 (spiritual) virgins (**Mt. 25:1**) that follow the Lamb whithersoever He goes, redeemed from the earth and from among men being the firstfruits unto God and to the Lamb and without fault before the Throne of God. (**Rev. 14:1-5**) These are not sealed from among Israel. Furthermore, they have the Father’s Name written in their foreheads, which is only promised to the Overcomers of the Church in Philadelphia (**Rev. 3:12**) and they are already “perfect” (without fault) before the Throne of God. These are taken to the Marriage Supper of the Lamb (**Mt. 22:1-14; 25:1-12**) which will last 3½ years and where every true born-again believer had been invited, but the majority refused to come or were not allowed to enter in. (**Mt. 22:3,5,8,14; 25:11,12**) This was already discussed previously.

The Remnant from Israel is also 144,000, namely, 12,000 from every tribe of Israel, sealed on the earth. (**Rev. 7:4-8**) These were not in Heaven where the Remnant from the Church was taken and seen by John. (**Rev. 7:3 vs. Rev. 12:5 and Rev. 14:3-5**) Now, the “Remnant from Israel” was sealed-anointed, as it were, evangelists for the time of the Tribulation. It will be the Jews, who will be preaching the “Gospel of the Kingdom” in all the world and also to the “Woman” (**Rev. 12:14**) during the Tribulation and before the end comes. (**Mt. 24:14**) Due to their mission, the multitudes

of all nations and kindreds and peoples and tongues will be redeemed from the Great Tribulation, as seen by John, before the Throne of God. (Rev. 7:9,14,15)

Let us, at this point, see and understand that the last four churches of the Book of Revelation, namely, Thyatira (Catholic churches), Sardis (Protestant churches), then Philadelphia (Brethren, during the latter rain) and Laodicea (Modern, Liberal churches, after the latter rain), all four are existing side by side until the end of this age. Sardis was “born” out of Thyatira; Philadelphia was “born” out of Sardis and what fell from Philadelphia (from love of the brethren), formed Laodicea which is known to be a prideful and blind and naked and miserable and lukewarm church of today.

We should also note that the number 144,000 has a spiritual significance; it is the multiplication of $12 \times 12 \times 1,000$ where 12 represents the eternal perfection, eternal government and 1,000 is $10 \times 10 \times 10$ where 10 represents the ordinal perfection and it indicates the abundance of the eternal perfection. You will notice when reading about the New Jerusalem, that it is wholly determined by number 12, so, everything in it is absolutely and eternally perfect. The two Remnants described in the previous paragraph represent eternally perfect firstfruits indicating that the harvest, once it ripens, will, in time, be the same – eternally perfect.

E) The Israel-Church goes through the Great Tribulation lasting 1,260 days, which is the Woman that fled into the wilderness after bringing forth the Man-child and God will feed Her there supernaturally during those days, (Rev. 12:6,14) and that not only physically, but also spiritually. The Remnant from Israel will be hard at work in this task!

Therefore, any doctrines declaring that the Church in Her entirety will be raptured before the Tribulation of seven years are FALSE! All preachers that preach this doctrine should pause and consider this truth of the Scripture in their own heart, mind and conscience and should not continue in this *sweet* deception which is so comfortable to our flesh.

The Israel-Church will go through the Judgments and Burning of the Tribulation and Her believers shall be either burnt by the **FIRE** (Jn. 15:6// Is. 33:12) or hurt by the **FIRE** (Rev. 2:11) or saved by the **FIRE** (1Cor. 3:15) or cleansed, purged and refined by the Spirit of Burning. (Is. 4:4// Dan. 12:1,10) The Judgment of **FIRE** and **Burning** shall be used by God to bring Israel-Church to repentance and obedience to His Word. (Rev. 2:5,16,21; 3:3,19) It is also the expression of His Love and Grace for all the carnal, ignorant and unwilling believers so that they would not be condemned with the world! (1Cor. 11:32)

F) And then, 1,260 days after the “abomination of the desolation” was set up and before the seven vials of the wrath of God are poured upon the earth, (Rev. 11:18; 16:1-17), the last trump shall sound and all believers (His people) from the Israel-Church worthy of the Kingdom shall be delivered-raptured to the air. This vast body of believers is composed of the dead ones which shall be resurrected first; then all those living on the earth shall be changed in their bodies and raptured. The Lord will descend from Heaven to the air and there they shall meet Him. (Dan. 12:1// 1Cor. 15:51-53// 1Thes. 4:16,17) THESE ALL ARE HOLY AND BLESSED AND WORTHY OF THE FIRST RESURRECTION. (Rev. 20:6)

All the other believers which were not worthy of God, not worthy of His Kingdom, did not walk with God, did not sow to the Spirit, but to their flesh, did not do the Will of God, (1Thes. 2:12// 2Thes. 1:5// Phil. 3:18,19// Mt. 7:21// Gal. 6:8, etc.) were unholy, cursed, workers of iniquity and were judged as UNWORTHY OF THE FIRST RESURRECTION, these all shall be “cast” into the outer darkness, there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth. (Mt. 8:12; 22:13; 24:50,51; 25:30) This is NOT the loss of Salvation since their names are still written in the Book of Life. Nor is this the “Purgatory” taught by the Catholic teachers. They are not there to cleanse themselves from unconfessed sins, leftover sins and the like. They are there because of their persistent disobedience toward their Heavenly Father and their resistance to be changed in their nature into the Image of His Son Jesus

Christ! I see and thus believe that they all will be given another chance to overcome and do the Will of their Father.

* * *

G) The Lord constrains us at this point to see and understand that it is NOT possible for any pagan to be saved after his physical death. But it shall be possible for the born-again believers, which after their Judgment before Christ were cast into the “prison” (outer darkness), to repent of their disobedience and be changed, (**1Pet. 3:19,20**) purged and cleansed by the Spirit of Judgment and the Spirit of Burning. They all will have 1,000 years to overcome and be changed. This applies to all believers judged by Christ as UNWORTHY of the First Resurrection and of the Kingdom.

The condition for this First Resurrection is BLESSEDNESS AND HOLINESS (**Rev. 20:6// Heb. 12:14// 2Cor. 7:1b// Eph. 4:24**, etc.) which is the opposite of filthiness and iniquity which are of the flesh and cursed and draw woes. (**Job 31:3; 34:21-27// Ps. 5:5; 14:2-4; 28:3-5; 36:12; 64:2-10// Pr. 21:15// Is. 5:18// Mic. 2:1// Mt. 23:28,29// Lk. 13:25-28**, etc. The question of curse was already discussed earlier.)

At their Judgment by Christ, the Parable of Christ in **Mt. 13:47-50** shall also come to pass. The separation of the wicked from the just shall take place where all are believers, but the just ones are those that walked and lived by faith (**Hab. 2:4// Rom. 1:17// Gal. 3:11// Heb. 10:38**) and not by their fleshly souls. From the numerous Scriptures shown above, it must be clear to any reader that a born-again, baptized believer may be wicked, unjust, cursed, a worker of iniquity and thus unholy and unrighteous.

The Lord desires that we would also see and understand the following important spiritual facts and truths.

- (a) The scope of the First Resurrection,
- (b) The battle of Overcomers with Satan,
- (c) The translations of His people and believers,
- (d) The Judgments of Christ.

(a) Concerning the scope of the First Resurrection, we must see and understand that it is similar to a harvest. A harvest normally begins with harvesting the firstfruits, then comes the main harvest and then it ends with a gleaning. All three parts are ONE harvest. So it is with this First Resurrection. It starts with taking the firstfruits, the Overcomers, then it continues with the main harvest of the Israel-Church (His people) when it is fully ripe (**Rev. 14:14-16**) and then will follow the gleaning (some of those in the outer darkness). All these three are ONE Resurrection though they do not take place at the same time. As there may be several days between taking the firstfruits and the main harvest, so there may be several years between taking the Overcomers and the main rapture of the Church.

We know that after Christ's Resurrection, there were many saints that rose from the dead, were resurrected, and showed themselves to many in Jerusalem. (**Mt. 27:52,53**) It was an exceptional resurrection of some Overcomers from Israel only at that very special and blessed occasion when Our Lord was resurrected and completed the Salvation of mankind and of all that was lost. Technically speaking, this could be called the First Resurrection and the one during the Tribulation the Second Resurrection; yet, it is called the First Resurrection by the Spirit of God and we must accept His reasoning.

(b) The battle of Overcomers with Satan has been already won in their souls, where his kingdom was destroyed and "he has nothing in them", in their existence. (**Jn. 14:30**) Therefore, they can do nothing more with Satan in themselves except to fight and overcome him in HIS OWN existence. That is why they are raptured before he is revealed on earth and just in time for the war in Heaven. Then and there, they overcome him in "his own existence" by the Blood of the Lamb and by their own testimony. (**Rev. 12:11**) As the young boy David destroyed "mighty" Goliath (**1Sam. 17:50, 51**), so the Man-child will destroy the "mighty" Satan.

The non-Overcomers, carnal believers will still have to overcome Satan and his kingdom in their own souls and

they will have a chance to do it during the Tribulation and in the outer darkness where there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

(c) We shall divide the translations of His People (Israel and the Church) into two time segments: BEFORE and AFTER the Resurrection of Christ.

BEFORE the Resurrection of Christ, all His people and believers (including Overcomers from the Old Testament) went to Hades, to the compartment for the righteous, which we may call "Abraham's bosom" and also "The First Paradise". All pagans and unbelievers went to the compartment for the condemned which was a place of FLAME AND TORMENT. (Lk. 16:19-31)

The Lord Himself went to this "First Paradise" after His death and preached there to those spirits "in prison". (1Pet. 3:19,20) There He was also met by the thief to whom He had promised from His Cross that the same day the thief would be with Him in Paradise. (Lk. 23:43). This Paradise was called "prison" by Peter as there was no freedom to escape anywhere. But it is also called "Paradise" as compared to the other place of flame and torment. Finally, I call it the First Paradise since there is the Second Paradise (see below). Hades is a transition place for pagans and all non-overcoming believers. All pagans will be there until the Second Resurrection, just before the Last Judgment.

AFTER the Resurrection of Christ, all Overcomers were taken out of Hades, from the "First Paradise", and were translated (not resurrected) into the "Second Paradise" without receiving their new bodies. The Second Paradise is in the Third Heaven where the Lord is present being represented there by the Tree of Life. They were allowed to eat from the Tree of Life and fellowship with the Lord Himself. (2Cor. 12:4// Rev. 2:7)

All Overcomers, who die before the rapture of the Man-child (Rev. 12:5) are translated, caught up, to the Second Paradise to be with the Lord, which includes Apostle

Paul. (**Phil. 1:23,24**) This Word does not apply to all believers, only to Overcomers! (**Rev. 2:7**) All Overcomers which will live will all be caught up to the Throne of God (**Rev. 12:5**) as His Bride where they will join the other Overcomers from the Second Paradise, who are also caught up to the Throne of God at that same time to begin the Marriage Supper of the Lamb. We should view also this Second Paradise as a transitional place, but it is for the Overcomers only.

All the other believers (non-overcomes), who die before the Tribulation period are translated into the "First Paradise" until the rapture of the Israel-Church at the last, seventh trump. This is their transitional place before they are judged by Christ. All pagans will remain in the place of Flame and Torment, which is their transitional place before their Last Judgment.

(d) When Paul says "**for we shall all stand before the Judgment Seat of Christ**" (**Rom. 14:10b**) he means all believers. This Word may give an impression that there is only one place for the Judgment Seat of Christ. But in my spirit, I see three places or areas where His Judgment shall take place. These three places or areas correspond to the Word of God in **Phil. 2:10,11** where His Judgment is rendered both in Heaven, on the earth and under the earth.

Concerning pagans, they all shall be judged by Christ at the Last Judgment. (**Jn. 5:22// Rev. 20:11-15**) We should understand that there, they shall bow their knees and confess with their tongue that Jesus Christ is Lord to the Glory of the Father before they are cast into the Lake of fire and brimstone. (**Is. 45:22,23// Rom. 14:11,12**)

Concerning believers, I see Christ's Judgment Seat first established in the First Paradise, under the earth. He first preached to those souls and spirits which were disobedient during the time of Noah. (**1Pet. 3:19,20**) That was the first (recorded) Judgment of Christ under the earth whereby He extended to those souls and spirits (mostly from the seed of Seth, which were in the Book of Life) the same

opportunity to be saved by obedience, confessions and repentances and overcoming and thus become worthy of the First Resurrection. Let us note that the Lord had never preached to those that were in the place of flame and torment (mainly from the seed of Cain), those that were not written in the Book of Life.

Then He called the Overcomers from the Old Testament which were there together with the other believers and His people. He judged them as worthy to be translated from the “prison” to the Second Paradise, the Third Heaven and to His Presence. (**Rev. 2:7// 2Cor. 12:2-4**) This has been their new transition place until they are also caught up to the Throne of God and to the Marriage Supper of the Lamb. He permitted some of them to be resurrected (receive bodies) at that time and rise up from their graves after His Resurrection and show themselves to many in Jerusalem. (**Mt. 27: 52,53**)

Later on, but before the rapture of the Church at the last trump, the Lord will judge all the rest of the believers in this First Paradise as to who is holy and blessed and therefore worthy of the First Resurrection and who is not. (**Rev. 20:6**) Those that are judged worthy shall be resurrected and raptured to meet the Lord in the air. The rest shall be cast into the “outer darkness”, there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth and they shall not be in the Presence of the Lord! (**Mt. 7:22,23; 8:11,12; 13:41-43,49,50; 22:8,11-14; 24:51; 25: 30// Lk. 13:24-28**)

Christ’s Seat of Judgment is also established in the Second Paradise (the Third Heaven) and at the Throne of God in Heaven. There He judges all the Overcomers, but only as to their rewards before they enter the Marriage Supper of the Lamb.

Finally, His third Seat of Judgment is established on the earth, where He will judge nations and separate them one from another and also individual believers, who will be living on the earth and surviving the Great Tribulation. The same rules of judgment will apply as described in the previous paragraph where He judges the believers in the First Paradise and their worthiness.

* * *

H) After the rapture of the Israel-Church, the wrath of God is poured upon the earth in the form of seven vials. (**Rev. 16:1-17**) This shall be done during the thirty days after the rapture, which is the difference between the 1,290 days of **Dan. 12:11** and 1,260 days of **Rev. 12:6** since the Woman is not appointed unto the wrath of God. (**1Thes. 5:9**)

There is yet another forty five days of difference between **Dan. 12:12** and **12:11** where the Word tells us that blessed is he who waits to the end of those days. This has been a mystery and the Lord has apparently not revealed its full truth up to this time. We may assume that the time may be necessary for the cleansing of the earth after the horrible destruction and decimation of our planet and of the mass killings of millions of people. I do not see the Kingdom of Heaven beginning in a place that looks like Sodom and Gomorrah. The Lord might fully reveal this mystery to us at a later time.

I) Then the END of man's self-rule will come and the KING OF KINGS AND LORD OF LORDS –THE WORD OF GOD– THE FAITHFUL AND TRUE – CHRIST JESUS shall descend from Heaven to the earth on a white horse, and His Bride and Wife shall be with Him, and He shall smite the nations, bring end to the battle of Armageddon and establish the Kingdom of Heaven on earth. (**Rev. 19:11-21**) Then shall Christ together with us rule the nations for 1,000 years. (**Rev. 20:4**)

J) When the 1,000 years are expired, Satan shall be loosed out of his prison and shall go and deceive the nations and they shall compass the camp of the saints and the beloved City Jerusalem. But the fire from God shall come down from Heaven and devour them and the Devil shall be cast into the Lake of fire and brimstone, where the Beast and the False prophet are and they shall be tormented there for ever and ever. (**Rev. 20:7-10**)

During the time between the end of the 1,000 years and the beginning of the Great White Throne Judgment (the Last Judgment) Christ will judge all those from the Kingdom

of Heaven still living on the earth as to how they lived and who remains in the Book of Life, being worthy of Eternal Life, and who does not. All the dead shall be judged at the Last Judgment after their resurrection.

K) The Last Judgment, the Great White Throne Judgment and the SECOND RESURRECTION shall take place and all the dead shall stand before God and all those not found written in the Book of Life shall be cast into the Lake of fire and brimstone, which is the second death. (**Rev. 20:11-15**)

Let us repeat that those believers which will not overcome and not abide in Christ even until the end of the Kingdom, all these will be taken out of the Book of Life and will be resurrected at the Second Resurrection. (**Jn. 15:6// Rev. 3:5// 1Jn. 5:16b// Mt.12:31,32**) At the Last Judgment, these shall not be found written in the Book of Life and shall be damned together with all pagans. (**Rev. 20:15**) But those believers that shall repent of their disobedience, overcome and change during these 1,000 years, shall remain written in the Book of Life and shall be saved.

L) A New Heaven and a New Earth shall be created by God and the New Holy Jerusalem, the Bride and Wife of the Lamb shall descend from Heaven and EVERY BELIEVER THAT OVERCOMES shall inherit all things and God will be his God and he shall be His son. But the fearful, and unbelieving, and the abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, shall have their part in the lake which burns with fire and brimstone, which is the second death. (**Rev. 21:1-10**) The New Jerusalem is further described in **Rev. 21:11-27; 22:1-5**.

M) Today, the Lord desires that we would read, meditate, see, believe and comprehend the ending passages of the Book of Revelation. He says to us the following Word:

“Behold, I come quickly; blessed is he that keeps the sayings of the prophecy of this book.” (**Rev. 22:7**)

“Blessed are they (from among believers) that DO His Commandments that they may have right to the

Tree of Life, and may enter in through the gates into the City. For without are dogs, (2Pet. 2:21,22) and sorcerers, and whoremongers, and murderers, (1Jn. 3:15) and idolaters, and whosoever makes a lie... And if any man shall take away from the words of the Book of this prophecy, God shall take away his part out of the Book of Life, and out of the Holy City, and from the things which are written in this Book.” (Rev. 22: 14,15,19)

“Surely I come quickly. Amen. Even so, come, Lord Jesus.” (Rev. 22:20)

* * *

PLEASE, CONSULT ALSO THE ADDENDUM FOR MORE DETAILS AS SHOWN ON THE TIMELINE WITH THEIR DESCRIPTIONS.

We shall not go into any further details of this last section as it is beyond the scope of this brief work. Rather, we will now turn to Our Lord and to Our Father in a *“Prayer of an Open Heart”* and will present our beings to Him as openly, honestly, sincerely and definitely as we are able in our fragile, imperfect being.

THE LORD DESIRES to hear from the readers, who have been touched at least by some parts of this book, who see their need before their Creator and Savior to seek His help or to change their lives or the course of their lives. If they so choose, they may tell Him their own prayer from their own heart or they may just read to Him aloud the *“Prayer of an Open Heart”* as recorded below. In either case, He will hear that soul, consider its prayer as a confession, repentance and consent of its free will. The Lord will answer the prayer and grant that soul all the necessary Grace and Power to make that prayer a reality in the life of each such individual believer. This is the promise of the Lord for every believer, who will solemnly declare this Prayer to His ears from an open heart. To each such heart and soul the Lord promises that HE shall be with him, and keep him safe from all the coming evil from now on until the END and until the NEW BEGINNING.

PRAYER OF AN OPEN HEART

To the Saviour, Lord and coming King of all kings CHRIST JESUS and to MY FATHER, which are in Heaven and in Whom I believe, but Whom I do not know in my soul as I desire or as I should.

I am coming to You, My Saviour and Lord just as I am right now... in my thoughts, feelings, understanding, fears, doubts and hopes. I feel I am unable in myself to do anything, to see and understand You, even to see and understand myself, to see the true purpose of my life, my future, my destiny. What I believe right now about myself, about my life, about my future and my destiny, or even about You, may not be so at all; the truth may be different, hidden. I am not even sure whether I can truly open my heart to You and confess to You what I consider and believe to be the truth. So, I am coming to You hoping that You understand, that You know me much better than I know myself. If I believe that You have created me, as I do believe in my heart and mind, then You must know and understand everything about me.

The more I think about You and about myself, the less I am sure about myself, in fact, I am not sure about anything anymore and sometimes I feel I do not know what to believe anymore. At times I am confused and trusting nothing and nobody. At other times I am able to believe and trust anybody, who speaks to me reasonable things, but many times I am unable to see whether he spoke truth or not. I have had hope; hope that some one would show me the truth, the way, the light, the solutions to my problems and give me the desired assurance... but so far, I found no one. So, I am coming to YOU! You are my hope and... as I try to pray and open my heart, I somehow see and believe that there may be no other hope for me, but You.

Yes, I believed in You... but I don't even know whether I have Your Spirit living in me or not, whether I am truly born-again or not. I do not feel it, I have no assurance. So, I just desire to deny my thoughts, deny my feelings, my

hesitations, anything that may hold me from opening my heart to You and come to You... so, I am coming to You on my knees. I repent to You, My Saviour, if I was never on my knees before You until now – just You Alone and me, and asking You for Your forgiveness. I repent to You, My Saviour, if I have never shed a tear before You until now – just before You Alone and me. And even if I have ever shed a tear, I just feel I should be before You more often... much more often, crying in my helplessness... until You would enable me to start seeing You, touching You, feeling You... and to know how You see me, what You see in me, what You truly desire from me, what great future You have truly prepared for me... and somehow show it to me. Thus far I have had imaginations and beliefs about You and about myself, but no real truthful picture. I never knew Your beliefs about me. I never cared what You have prepared for me and how long You have been actually waiting for me.

I confess that I have never had such an experience of Your Presence in my entire life, I never spoke to You so openly, never dared to open my heart to You, never understood anything... and my beliefs and convictions must have been even laughable for You at times, and I never gave you any chance to say so. I am not sure whether I see, hear and understand in spirit and whether I am even in the right shape to receive such things from You should You offer them to me. But if I am truly blind and ignorant... please, have mercy on me and grant me what I need according to Your Perception and Wisdom and Grace for me. Lord, open my eyes and enable me to see and understand what I have never seen and understood before. May I truly receive from You all that You have for me?... what may be very necessary for me at this very time?... what may affect and even determine my life both now and in my future?... what will determine my destiny? May I even hope to live with You and experience the true Heaven? Really? I have no idea about Heaven... for me it is like a fairytale, and I am free to imagine anything. Religion has not given me any true or realistic picture and any assurances except words and teachings, quoting the Scriptures. I need true assurances from

You. Will YOU be so kind and build in me Your true and living assurance? Thank You, Lord.

Whenever I prayed the prayer that You taught us in Your Word (Mt.6:9), I just mumbled it by heart, mechanically, having no real sense of what I was saying. Can You, please, show me that God of this Universe, the Almighty Creator is really “My Father”? That I am really His child? That I was born of Him into His Family?, and that I can experience it? I know that this is in Your Word, but can this be real? May I ever get a real living sense of this truth into my conscience? He is Your Father... but Mine also? I do not find in myself the strength and the way how I can approach Him... My Father, and talk to Him, even expect Him to answer me back... when I am nothing compared to Him. I was told that these things do not depend on my feelings, understanding or my imaginations. Well, I cannot help myself, Dear Lord, but my feelings are flooding me like a sea wave when I am just about to open my heart and talk to You... or even to My Father.

*I was always trying to do “my best”... to live my religion, discuss and even teach my religion to others and that to the best of my ability and understanding. But it has not resolved any of my problems; it has not changed the quality of my life or the life of anybody that I know. It has changed the **form** of my life, it changed my friends and acquaintances, but it has not brought me any new or better vision for my life and has not provided me with any valuable results. So, I conclude, Lord, that “my best” will never achieve anything, that without You I can do nothing. I do not even possess the assurance that I am able to lay down my life before You and trust You in everything. Can You help me do this? Will You help me to do what You desire from me and what I am unable to do?*

*Because when You will start doing it in me, I will **know** that it will be Your hand and this alone will start building in me faith and assurance; this alone will start changing my life and also the life of my family; this alone will resolve my problems which so far have been unsolvable; this alone*

will cause that I will not only be existing in this world not knowing where I am going and why, but living a true life as You intended for me; then my hope will also be living and real. Do I believe this? Yes, I do!

*Thank You, Lord... and thank You, Father very much. May I become acceptable to You and may I begin to please You because You will enable me to be so and to do what I have never done before... this will not be "my best", but "Your best". Enable me to come to You more often, to seek You... to experience Your Grace and Love and Goodness and Patience and Power in my own earthly life. Then will I truly **know** You and trust You and praise You and follow You until we meet. And then You will also present me to Your Father... and My Father in Heaven.*

Let it be so, dear Lord Jesus Christ. AMEN.

NOTE:

Dear reader, do not hesitate to repeat this prayer even more than once should you so feel or desire. Repetition will help you register in your conscience what you are saying to the Almighty God and your Saviour and thus to open your heart more and more until you will reach Him. HE IS LISTENING TO YOU AND WILL ANSWER YOU the way you would be able to perceive immediately or later on.

Read also His Word in **Jam. 4:8** and **Mt. 18:19** and know assuredly that I FULLY AGREE WITH YOU AS TOUCHING THE ABOVE PRAYER, so we shall be two before Our Father, which is in Heaven, and He will assuredly do it unto us! This is His Word and Promise and He never fails to do His Word. And I do intercede before the Lord Jesus Christ for each such heart and soul that trusts in His Grace and promise to grant that soul all that it will need both now and in its entire future. Amen.

ADDENDUM

Please, see the sketch of the Timeline on a separate sheet of paper at the end of the book. The important events (arrows) and places are numbered and the comments following below correspond to their number on the Timeline.

1 - All pagans of all ages that died either BEFORE or AFTER Christ's Resurrection went to the compartment of Hell for the condemned which is the place of Flame and Torment. (Lk. 16:23-26) The same applies to all pagans that die from now until the Great White Throne Judgment (point **15**) when all pagans are resurrected and condemned to the eternal death. (Jn. 5:29) There is no possibility of Redemption after death.

2 - All believers (Israel and others) that died BEFORE Christ's Resurrection went to the compartment of Hell for the righteous, which may be called Abraham's Bosom (Lk. 16:22), and I also call it the "First Paradise" (as there is also a "Second Paradise"). AFTER Christ's Resurrection, the Overcomers go to a different place (point **7**) while the rest of the believers still go to this First Paradise.

3 - After the Lord died on the Cross, He descended to the same Abraham's Bosom or the First Paradise where He preached to the spirits and souls that were disobedient during the time of Noah. (1Pet. 3:19,20) Here came also the thief to whom He promised, while on the Cross, saying "**today you will be with Me in Paradise**". (Lk. 23:42,43) At that time Christ made His first Judgment of believers under the earth. All Overcomers (from the Old Testament) were to leave that First Paradise and be translated into the Second Paradise without being resurrected (see **5**).

4 - After three days, CHRIST ROSE FROM THE DEAD and appeared unto Mary Magdalene. (Jn. 20:14-17) Then He ascended to Heaven to open the Book with seven seals (Rev. 5:1-9) and the same day He returned to the earth to see His Disciples. (Jn. 20:19) He remained on the earth for forty days and showed Himself to many of His Disciples.

5 - Based on the Judgment of the Lord, all Overcomers from the Old Testament were translated into the Second Paradise which is in the Third Heaven (**7**) and it is their new transitional place before being taken to the Throne of God. (**Rev. 2:7**) They did not receive new bodies except those resurrected right after Christ's Resurrection. We should see and understand that to be caught up, translated or raptured does not necessarily mean to obtain a new glorified body at that same time. (**2Cor. 12:2-4**) Yet the Lord allowed some of them to be resurrected, to rise from their graves and show themselves to many in Jerusalem (**Mt. 27:52,53**) before being taken to the Third Heaven. This was an exception because of His own Resurrection; otherwise, the First Resurrection 2,000 years later would not be the First.

6 - After forty days on the earth, the Lord was taken up to Heaven in the sight of His Disciples. (**Mk. 16:19// Lk. 24:51**)

7 - The Second Paradise is in the Third Heaven and has the Tree of Life which represents the Living Christ. This is a new transition place AFTER His Resurrection for all Overcomers who died before being caught up to the Throne of God directly. (**2Cor. 12:2-4// Rev. 2:7**) Here came also Apostle Paul, who walked by faith being a spiritual believer. (**2Cor. 5:7,8**) It is in this place, a heavenly area, where another Judgment Seat of Christ is set up to judge the Overcomers. This Judgment only decides on their particular rewards before they enter the Marriage Supper of the Lamb.

8 - Sometime before the antichrist is revealed (**2Thes. 2:7,8**) and takes up the power over the whole world which will be close to the middle of Daniel's 70th week and to the beginning of the Great Tribulation, the Lord comes for His Bride. (**Mt. 25:6,10**) All the living Overcomers are caught up directly to the Throne of God. (**Rev. 12:5**) There they will be joined by all the other Overcomers which will get there from the Third Heaven, the Second Paradise. Those that had no new bodies, at that time, will receive them. They all will take part in the war in Heaven, and on behalf of the whole Israel-Church, they will overcome Satan. (**Rev. 12:7,11**)

9 - Satan and his angels are all cast down to the earth. (Rev. 12:7-9) Woe to the inhabitants of the earth and of the sea! Satan knows that he has but a short time; he makes war with the believers that keep God's Commandments and have the testimony of Jesus Christ. (Rev. 12:12-17) This is the time (the middle of the 7 year Tribulation) when the anti-christ is revealed as he desecrates the Holy Place in the Temple of God by stopping the sacrifices sitting in the Temple and showing himself to be God. (2Thes. 2:1-4)

10 - Before the last 7th trump, the Lord again uses His Judgment Seat in the First Paradise and judges all the believers therein as to who is worthy of God, of His Kingdom, (1Thes. 2:12// 2Thes. 1:5// Mt. 25:19) of His calling fulfilling the pleasure of His goodness and the work of faith with power; (2Thes. 1:11) who did the Will of His Father (Mt. 7:21) and who is holy and blessed and thus worthy of the First Resurrection. (Rev. 20:6) All these shall be prepared for the rapture of the Israel-Church. Then He returns and descends from Heaven to meet His Church in the air; He does not come to the earth at that particular time. (1Thes. 4:16,17)

11 - All those judged as worthy of the First Resurrection shall be resurrected (from the First Paradise) or changed (if still living on the earth) and raptured to meet the Lord in the air and so they shall ever be with the Lord; it means, that these believers shall never depart from the Lord, not that they shall ever be in the air. (1Cor. 15:51-53// 1Thes. 4:16,17) Then they shall go to Heaven to be prepared for their return to the earth with the Lord to establish the Kingdom of Heaven on earth. Those that came out of the Great Tribulation and washed their robes and made them white in the Blood of the Lamb (Rev. 7:14) and were seen by John before the Throne of God are those also raptured at the last trump. We should see and understand that most of those believers judged as worthy of the First Resurrection will be "refined" by the Fire and the Spirit of Burning during the Tribulation. To "wash their robes and make them white in the Blood of the Lamb" represents the process of the Salvation of their souls, which includes all the works of their faith.

12 - Then, after the seven vials of the wrath of God are poured upon the earth, the Heaven will be open and the KING OF KINGS, AND LORD OF LORDS, CHRIST JESUS, with His armies in Heaven shall descend to the earth, stop the battle of Armageddon, cast the Beast and the False prophet to the Lake of fire and brimstone (arrow **12c**) and establish the Kingdom of Heaven on earth. (**Rev. 19:11-21**) Then will the Lord establish His Seat of Judgment on the earth and judge the nations and individuals as per His Word in **Mt. 25:31-40** (arrow **12a**) and in **Mt. 25:41-46** (arrow **12c**). Also those that will survive the Tribulation and will be living, but were an offence to the Lord and worked iniquity will be gathered by God's angels and cast into the "outer darkness" and fire (arrow **12b**), there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth. (**Mt. 13:41,42,49,50**) But the righteous shall enter the Kingdom (arrow **12a**) and shall shine in it as the sun. (**Mt. 13:43**)

13 - Satan is cast into the bottomless pit. After the 1,000 years of the Kingdom of Heaven, he is released for a short season to go and deceive the nations. (**Rev. 20:1-3,7,8**)

14 - When the holy and blessed believers from the First Paradise are resurrected and raptured (point **11**), those judged unworthy of the First Resurrection (point **10**) shall be cast out of the Lord's Presence and into another transitional area called the "outer darkness", there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth. (**Mt. 7:23; 8:12; 22:11-14; 24:51; 25:11, 12,30// Lk. 13:27,28**, etc.) This area will be in some manner interconnected with the Lake of fire and brimstone, which will hurt these believers with its FIRE in some way. (**Rev. 2:11**) They shall not live until the 1,000 years of the Kingdom are passed during which the Overcomers will reign with Christ on the earth. (**Rev. 20:4,5**) Then they shall leave the "outer darkness" and be resurrected and shall appear at the Great White Throne Judgment together with all the pagans which shall also be resurrected. (**Rev. 20:11-13**)

15 - All pagans of all ages in the compartment of Hell for the condemned, the place of Flame and Torment, (**Lk. 16: 23-26**) shall be resurrected and shall appear at the Great

White Throne Judgment. (**Rev. 20:11-13**) There they shall be judged according to their works. The believers resurrected from the “outer darkness” (point **14**) shall also be judged at this Last Judgment Seat of Christ according to their works recorded in the books. All those that shall not be found in the Book of Life shall be condemned and cast into the Lake of fire and brimstone, which is the Second Death. (**Rev. 3:5; 20:15**) It is fair to say that many of these believers will have plentiful chances to see and believe what they were and what they had done during their earthly life. They will be able to do the necessary confessions and repentances (in plural) during those 1,000 years and thus be cleansed and purified by the FIRE and the Spirit of Burning (**Is. 4:4**) so that their names may not be blotted out of the Book of Life. Lacking physical bodies, they will need a more intense fire and testing of their souls and spirits to undo what they were sowing all their earthly “Christian” life.

16 - The believers that remained in the Book of Life shall remain saved and shall join the saved nations that shall walk in the light of the Holy City of New Jerusalem. (**Rev. 21:24**)

17 - The believers whose names were blotted out of the Book of Life (**Rev. 3:5// Jn. 15:6**) and all pagans will be together condemned and cast into the Lake of fire and brimstone, which is the Second Death. (**Rev. 20:15**) Hell and Death shall also be cast into the same Lake of fire and brimstone. (**Rev. 20:14**) These underground “transitional” areas (**1, 2 and 14**) will then cease to exist. This will be the end of evil as a living force in the New Creation of God. But the Lake of fire and brimstone, this Second Death with its torment, will continue for ever.

18 - The New Creation of God, New Earth, New Heaven and New Jerusalem, (**Rev. 21:1,10-27**) will commence after the Great White Throne Judgment is completed and all its decisions executed. This New Creation of God with all the Glory of God and peace and joy will also continue for ever.

EPILOGUE

Since this is a sequel to our book “Word to the Church of Jesus Christ^[8]”, the Lord provided the same closing word also to this book and that through brother T. Austin-Sparks from his brochure “The Kingdom that cannot be shaken, Part 4”, published by The Golden Candlestick Trust, Twello, Holland, pages 2,3 and 4:

*“We will not – we must not – put **Romans 8:28-29** into any lesser category than God’s purpose for all in Christ; that is, we must not say that this is for a certain number in the thought of God. It is for all in Christ, and this is God’s will for all His people, but as has always been the case, the majority of the Lord’s people do not follow on spontaneously, and the Lord has continually to have in the midst of them, amongst them, before them, a company embodying and representing and expressing His full thought, to be a ministry of revelation and a ministry of strengthening and exhortation to His people. It is a ministering vessel in the midst of His people, and that vessel not just having special information to give, but that vessel being the embodiment of that, which the Lord would have all His people know and be. Paul put himself into that category in a personal way...*

...He put himself, therefore, in the position of one, who was the full embodiment of God’s thought for the Church, and so Paul became in very truth a dispensational man; that is, the individual in whom the whole supreme meaning of the dispensation was gathered up experimentally; and the Church, the Body of Christ, being the supreme feature of this dispensation, had its embodiment and expression in a living way in that one man.

Now what was true in him as an individual early in the dispensation has had to be true and be repeated again and again through the dispensation in instruments, which God has raised up; that is, that there shall be a living voice – not a voice of teaching, a voice just of truth in the technical or academic sense, not just the proclamation of something,

but a living embodiment and expression of God's thought amongst His people. The Word of the Lord to such a vessel at all times will be: **"whether they will hear or whether they will forbear"**. (Ez. 2:5)

It is so easy from time to time to let go, to sag because your message is not wanted and because you see no place for it, no room for it, or because you see almost universal opposition to it; to conclude, or to take the attitude as though you had concluded, that this is not the message for the time, the people are not ready for it, they are not open to it, they will not have it. **Whether they will hear or whether they will forbear** is the Lord's word to an instrument, which He raises up for any purpose. That is, although you may be speaking in the wilderness, you have to get on with it; although no one will listen to you, you have got to go on; although you may see no response, but just universal antagonism, you have to go on with your work... **"whether they will hear or whether they will forbear"**.

For the fullness of God's thought a vessel has to be constituted accordingly, and if the fullness of God's thoughts is sonship as the means of the universal dominion of which this letter speaks, the universal dominion of Christ, then our training is along the lines of sonship, for we are called to that ministry...

...What is the basis of the training of sons? It is the cross. What is the pattern of the training of sons? It is the Son. What is the sphere of the training of sons? It is in the spirit."

AMEN.

LIST OF LITERATURE

- [1] **“The Messenger of the Cross”** by Watchman Nee. Published by Christian Fellowship Publishers, Inc., 11515 Allecingie Parkway, Richmond, Virginia 23235, USA. (in English only)
- [2] **“The Release of the Spirit”** by Watchman Nee. Published by Ministry of Life, Box 74, Route 2, Cloverdale, Indiana 46120, USA. (in English only)
- [3] **“The Battle for Life”** by T. Austin-Sparks. Published by Emmanuel Church, Tulsa, Oklahoma, USA. (in English only)
- [4] **“Strong in the Day of Battle”** by T. Austin-Sparks. Published by Emmanuel Church, Tulsa, Oklahoma, USA. (in English only)
- [5] **“The Christ, the Antichrist and the Church”**, Part 1, by T. Austin-Sparks. Published by The Golden Candlestick Trust, Twello, Holland. (in English only)
- [6] **“Our Warfare”** by T. Austin-Sparks. Published by Emmanuel Church, Tulsa, Oklahoma, USA. (in English only)
- [7] **“The Cross and Higher Ground”**, Parts 1-4, by T. Austin-Sparks. Published by The Golden Candlestick Trust, Twello, Holland. (in English only)
- [8] **“Word to the Church of Jesus Christ”** by brother Hanola. Published in 2006 by Montreal Remnant Ministries (MRM) in Montreal, Quebec, Canada. (also in Slovak as „Slovo k Cirkvi Ježiša Krista“)
- [9] **“Truth about Salvation”** by brother Hanola. Published in 2003 by Montreal Remnant Ministries (MRM) in Montreal, Quebec, Canada. (also in Slovak as „Pravda o Spáse“)

- [10] **“Open Letter to His Majesty and Excellency Christ Jesus, the King of kings and Lord of lords, the only true God”** by brother Hanola. Published in 1986 by MRM, Montreal, Quebec, Canada. (also in Czech as „Otevřený Dopis Jeho Výsosti a Excelenci, Ježíši Kristu, Králi králů a Pánu pánů, jedinému pravému Bohu“)
- [11] **“The Mystery of Reality”** by brother Hanola. Published in 1995 by MRM, Montreal, Quebec, Canada. (also in Slovak as „Tajomstvo Skutočnosti“)
- [12] **“Seek Ye First the Kingdom”** by brother Hanola. Published in 1990 by MRM, Montreal, Quebec, Canada. (in English only)
- [13] **“The New Temple and the Second Coming”** by Grant. R. Jeffrey. Published in 2007 by WaterBrook Press, 12265 Oracle Boulevard, Suite 200, Colorado Springs, CO 80921, USA. (in English only) Reprinted from *The New Temple and the Second Coming*. Copyright © 2007 by Grant Jeffrey. Used by permission of WaterBrook Press, Colorado Springs, CO. All rights reserved.
- [14] **“Generation Cords and Their Effect on You”** by John Adejoro-Oluwa. Published by Plummet Publishing, Ikeja, Lagos, Nigeria. (also in Slovak as „Generačné Povrazy a ich vplyv na vás.“)
- [15] **“Dealing Wisely with the Sins of My Youth”** by John Adejoro-Oluwa. Published by Plummet Publishing, Ikeja, Lagos, Nigeria. (also in Slovak as „Hriechy Mojej Mladosti a ako s nimi múdro jednať.“)
- [16] **“Thy Kingdom Come”** by brother Hanola. Published in 1983 by MRM, Montreal, Quebec, Canada. (in Slovak only as „Príd' Kráľovstvo Tvoje“)
- [17] **“Christians will go through the Tribulation”** by Jim McKeever. Published in 1978 by Alpha Omega Publishing Company, P.O.Box 4130, Medford, Oregon 97501, USA (in English only)